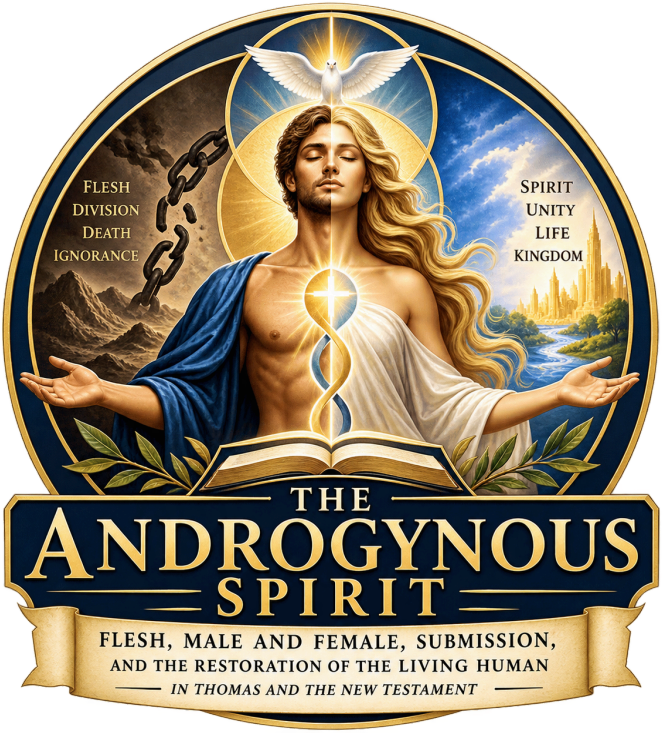
The Androgynous Spirit
VOLUME I of III

Flesh, Male and Female, Submission, and the Restoration of the Living Human in Thomas and the New Testament



The Androgynous Spirit VOLUME I of III.....1
Flesh, Male and Female, Submission, and the Restoration of the Living Human in Thomas and the New Testament..1
Reverend Moshe Reed..... 35
Copyright & License.....37
Preface — The Mystery of Male and Female..... 39
Part I — The Two Natures..... 44
Chapter 1 — Flesh and Spirit..... 45
1. The Human Being in the Flesh.....46
2. Flesh as a Condition..... 47
3. The Spirit Gives Life.....49
4. Flesh and Spirit as Two Orientations.....50
5. The Flesh and the Present Age..... 52
6. The Body as Temporary Dwelling.....53
7. “Away From the Body”..... 55
8. Male and Female Within the Flesh.....56
9. The Spirit Beyond Sexual Identity..... 57
10. The Inner Conflict..... 59
11. The Spirit as Awakening.....60
12. Flesh Is Not the Final Human.....61
13. The Beginning of the Androgynous Mystery.....62
14. From Flesh to Spirit.....64
Conclusion — The Two Natures..... 65
Part I — The Two Natures..... 66
Chapter 2 — Male and Female in the Flesh..... 66
1. The First Division.....67
2. The Body as Embodied Identity..... 69
3. Male and Female as Embodied Conditions..... 70
4. Desire.....71

5. Desire and the Flesh..... 73
6. The Hierarchy of the Flesh..... 74
7. The Biblical Household Order.....75
8. Authority and Responsibility.....77
9. The Male as Guide.....78
10. The Female as Receptive and Relational.....79
11. The Hidden Feminine in the Male..... 80
12. The Hidden Masculine in the Female.....81
13. The Meaning of “Becoming Male”..... 82
14. The Feminine Does Not Remain Trapped in the Flesh. 84
15. Submission and Transformation.....85
16. The Male Who Liberates..... 86
17. The Female Who Awakens.....87
18. The Limitations of the Present Age.....88
19. Toward the Androgynous Human.....89
20. The Two Are Moving Toward One..... 90
Conclusion — Beyond the Fleshly Division..... 92
Part I — The Two Natures..... 93
Chapter 3 — The Living Spirit.....93
1. What Is the Living Spirit?..... 94
2. The Body Is Not the Final Identity.....95
3. Jesus and the Spirit..... 97
4. Birth of the Spirit.....98
5. Awakening Rather Than Escape.....99
6. The Living Spirit and Knowledge..... 99
7. The Living Spirit and Light..... 100
8. The Spiritual Human and the Present Age..... 101
9. The World of the Flesh..... 102

10. The Living Spirit and Death..... 103
11. The Heavenly Dwelling..... 104
12. Beyond Male and Female..... 105
13. The Androgynous Dimension..... 106
14. Thomas and the Living Spirit..... 107
15. The Feminine Within the Male..... 108
16. The Masculine Within the Female..... 109
17. Submission and Spiritual Transformation..... 110
18. The True Male..... 111
19. The True Female..... 112
20. The One Beyond the Two..... 113
21. The Living Spirit and Liberation..... 114
22. The Kingdom..... 115
Conclusion — Becoming a Living Spirit..... 115
Part I — The Two Natures..... 117
Chapter 4 — The Hidden Androgynous Human..... 117
1. The Human Being Beneath the Body..... 119
2. The Image of God..... 120
3. The Divine Image and the Two..... 121
4. Androgyny Does Not Mean Biological Confusion... 122
5. Masculine and Feminine as Principles..... 123
6. The Masculine Without the Feminine..... 124
7. The Feminine Without the Masculine..... 126
8. The Hidden Human..... 127
9. Thomas 22: Making the Two One..... 127
10. Inside and Outside..... 128
11. Above and Below..... 129
12. Male and Female Become One..... 130

13. Thomas 114 and the Transformation of Mary..... 131
14. The Hidden Feminine in the Male..... 132
15. The Hidden Masculine in the Female..... 133
16. Submission and the Mystery of Union..... 134
17. The One Flesh and the One Spirit..... 135
18. The Androgynous Human and Christ..... 136
19. The Image Restored..... 137
20. Beyond Masculine Supremacy..... 138
21. Beyond Feminine Supremacy..... 139
22. The Human as a Meeting Place..... 139
23. The Restoration of the Two..... 140
24. The Hidden Human Awakens..... 141
25. The Androgynous Human and the Kingdom..... 142
Conclusion — The Human Beneath the Human..... 143
Part II — The Gospel of Thomas..... 144
Chapter 5 — "Make the Two One"..... 144
1. The Saying..... 145
2. The Two..... 146
3. Unity Does Not Mean Sameness..... 147
4. Male and Female..... 148
5. The One Humanity..... 149
6. The Inner Meaning of Male and Female..... 150
7. The Masculine Principle..... 151
8. The Feminine Principle..... 152
9. The Complete Human..... 153
10. The Man and His Hidden Feminine..... 154
11. The Woman and Her Hidden Masculine..... 155
12. Thomas and the Mystery of Mary..... 156

13. Why Male Is Used as the Symbol..... 157
14. The Pauline Parallel.....158
15. The One in Christ..... 158
16. Fleshly Hierarchy and Spiritual Unity.....159
17. One Flesh.....160
18. From Marriage to Mysticism.....161
19. The Inside and Outside.....162
20. The Above and Below.....163
21. The Human as Temple.....163
22. The Two Eyes..... 164
23. The Two Hands.....165
24. The Two Feet..... 166
25. Making the Two One Within the Individual.....166
26. Making the Two One Between Persons.....167
27. The End of Sexual Rivalry..... 168
28. The End of Fragmentation.....169
29. The Androgynous Image..... 170
30. The Kingdom and the One.....171
31. The Mystery of Unity..... 171
32. The Living Spirit..... 172
Conclusion — The Two Become One.....173
Part II — The Gospel of Thomas.....175
Chapter 6 — The Saying of Mary..... 175
Thomas 114: Peter's Rejection of Mary, Jesus' Response, and the Mystery of Becoming “Male”...175
1. The Saying.....176
2. Peter's Rejection..... 177
3. Jesus Does Not Accept the Finality of Mary's Exclusion 179

4. Why “Male”?.....180
5. The Male as Spiritual Symbol..... 181
6. Mary Must Become More Than Her Body.....182
7. The Feminine Condition.....183
8. Becoming Male as Becoming Spiritually Complete. 184
9. The Mystery of the Two..... 185
10. Mary as the Feminine Seeking the Masculine.....186
11. The Male Must Also Transform..... 187
12. The True Male..... 188
13. The True Female.....188
14. Submission and the Saying.....189
15. The Male's Responsibility..... 190
16. The Male Who Leads Toward Life.....191
17. Mary and the Kingdom.....192
18. The Kingdom Beyond Fleshly Identity..... 193
19. The Androgynous Reading.....194
20. The Danger of a Literal Reading..... 194
21. The Feminine Is Not Destroyed.....195
22. Peter's Error..... 196
23. Mary's Transformation as Revelation.....197
24. The Male Must Become More Than Male..... 198
25. The Woman Must Become More Than Woman..... 199
26. The Living Spirit Is the Goal.....200
27. From Mary to Humanity.....201
28. The Final Unity.....202
Conclusion — Mary and the Living Spirit..... 202
Part II — The Gospel of Thomas.....204
Chapter 7 — What Does “Make Her Male” Mean?..... 205

1. The Literal Reading..... 205
2. The Symbolic Reading..... 206
3. Male as a Symbol of Spiritual Agency..... 208
4. The Problem of Ancient Symbolism..... 209
5. Symbol and Reality..... 210
6. Thomas 22 as the Key..... 210
7. Why Mary Begins With the Feminine..... 211
8. Becoming Male as Awakening..... 212
9. The Masculine Principle..... 213
10. The Feminine Principle..... 214
11. The True Meaning of Androgyny..... 215
12. The Male Must Also Become “Female”..... 216
13. The Female Must Become “Male”..... 217
14. The Body Remains..... 218
15. Flesh and Spirit..... 218
16. The Body Is Not the Enemy..... 219
17. The Mystery of Desire..... 220
18. Submission and the Masculine..... 221
19. The Male as Guide..... 222
20. Mary as the Receptive Spirit..... 223
21. The Two Become One Within Mary..... 224
22. The Two Become One Within the Male..... 224
23. Spiritual Masculinity Is Acquired..... 225
24. The Living Spirit Is Beyond Both..... 226
25. The Kingdom..... 227
26. From “Male” to “Living Spirit”..... 228
    1. Female..... 228
    2. Male..... 228

3. One.....228
4. Living Spirit.....228
27. The Deeper Christian Context.....228
28. The Difference Between Thomas and Paul.....229
29. The Mystery of Transformation.....230
30. The Hidden Human.....231
31. The Mystery of Spiritual Sex.....232
32. Beyond the Symbol.....232
33. The Transformation of the Male and Female.....233
34. The Meaning of "Worthiness of Life".....234
35. The Final Meaning.....235
Conclusion — Beyond "Male".....236
Part II — The Gospel of Thomas.....237
Chapter 8 — The Living Spirit.....237
1. The Destination Is Life.....238
2. Why Transformation Is Necessary.....239
3. "Male" as the Threshold.....240
4. The Living Spirit Beyond the Symbol.....241
5. The Living Spirit Is Not Biological Male.....242
6. The Spirit and the Body.....242
7. The Pauline Parallel.....243
8. Flesh Is Not Simply the Female.....244
9. The Male Must Become Living Spirit.....245
10. The Female Must Become Living Spirit.....246
11. The Kingdom.....247
12. The Kingdom and Spiritual Identity.....247
13. The Androgynous Spirit.....248
14. The Masculine Principle as Awakening.....249

15. The Feminine Principle as Receptivity.....250
16. The Union of Initiative and Receptivity.....250
17. The Male as Guide.....251
18. The Woman's Submission.....252
19. The Living Spirit and Freedom..... 253
20. The Present Age and the Kingdom.....254
21. The Living Spirit and Death.....255
22. The Transformation of Consciousness..... 256
23. The Living Spirit and Knowledge..... 256
24. The Living Spirit and Love..... 257
25. The Living Spirit and the Other.....258
26. The Two Become One..... 258
27. The Living Spirit and Resurrection..... 259
28. The Final Identity..... 260
29. The Meaning of “Making Herself Male”..... 261
30. The Transformation Is Universal.....261
31. The Kingdom as Unity..... 262
32. From Division to Life.....263
33. The Mystery of the Living Spirit.....264
Conclusion — Becoming Alive.....264
Part II — The Gospel of Thomas.....266
Chapter 9 — Mary and the Restoration of the Feminine.... 266
1. Mary as the Rejected Woman.....267
2. Jesus Sees Beyond the Category..... 268
3. Mary as Embodied Female.....269
4. The Female as a Symbol of Receptivity.....270
5. Mary and Spiritual Agency.....271
6. The Feminine Is Not Destroyed.....271

7. The Masculine Received by the Feminine..... 272
8. The Feminine Restored.....273
9. Mary and Thomas 22.....274
10. The Feminine Within the Male.....275
11. The Male Must Also Be Restored..... 275
12. Mary as a Mirror.....276
13. The Body and the Spirit.....277
14. The Present Age.....278
15. The World That Says “Unworthy”..... 279
16. The Kingdom as Restoration..... 279
17. The Female and the Kingdom..... 280
18. The Meaning of Restoration..... 281
19. Mary and the Divine Image..... 282
20. The Feminine as Image-Bearer.....282
21. Submission Revisited..... 283
22. The Male as Servant..... 284
23. Mary as Restored Receptivity.....284
24. The Living Spirit in the Female.....285
25. The Living Spirit in the Male..... 285
26. The Two Are Reconciled.....286
27. Mary and the Androgynous Human..... 287
28. The Deeper Identity.....288
29. Restoration Through Christ..... 288
30. From Rejection to Recognition.....289
31. The Feminine Is Not the Enemy.....290
32. The Male Is Not the Enemy.....290
33. The Restoration of Humanity..... 291
34. Mary as the Doorway..... 291

35. The Kingdom Beyond Gendered Worth..... 292
Conclusion — Mary Restored..... 293
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....294
Chapter 10 — The Woman and the Man..... 294
1. Male and Female in the Created Order.....295
2. One Humanity, Two Sexes..... 296
3. The Meaning of Social Order..... 297
4. The Man Within the Household..... 299
5. Authority and Sacrifice.....299
6. The Woman Within the Household..... 300
7. Submission.....301
8. Submission and Love.....302
9. The Man as Head.....303
10. The Woman as the Body.....304
11. The Two as One Flesh..... 305
12. Male Authority and Female Dignity.....306
13. The Pastoral Epistles..... 307
14. The Woman and Teaching..... 307
15. The Woman and Learning..... 308
16. The Man and Responsibility.....309
17. The Woman and Strength..... 310
18. The Spiritual Order.....311
19. The Fleshly Temptation of Hierarchy.....312
20. The Spiritual Meaning of Headship.....313
21. The Spiritual Meaning of Submission.....313
22. The Relationship Between the Two.....314
23. The Androgynous Dimension of Marriage.....315
24. The Household as Spiritual Discipline..... 316

25. The Present Age and the Household.....317
26. The Man and Woman Before God.....318
27. Christ as the Pattern.....319
28. Mary as the Counterpoint.....319
29. The Social and the Mystical.....320
30. The Final Equality of Spirit.....321
Conclusion — The Woman and the Man.....322
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....323
Chapter 11 — "Let the Woman Learn in Silence".....323
1 Timothy 2:11–15 and the Question of Authority, Teaching, and Submission.....324
1. The Passage.....325
2. "Let a Woman Learn".....325
3. Learning as Spiritual Formation.....326
4. What Does "Silence" Mean?.....327
5. Quietness and Submission.....328
6. The Restriction on Teaching.....329
7. Adam and Eve.....330
8. Eve and Deception.....331
9. The Historical Setting.....331
10. Authority and Spiritual Identity.....332
11. Mary as a Counterpoint.....333
12. Submission Does Not Mean Spiritual Death.....334
13. The Masculine Principle of Authority.....335
14. The Feminine Principle of Receptivity.....335
15. From Reception to Transformation.....336
16. Why Must She Learn?.....337
17. Teaching and Authority.....338
18. Women Who Taught Elsewhere in the New Testament

338
19. The Order of the Church.....339
20. The Household and the Church..... 340
21. Adam, Eve, and the Meaning of Order.....341
22. The Fall and Spiritual Discernment.....342
23. The Man Is Not Immune to Deception.....342
24. The Integrated Male.....343
25. The Integrated Female.....344
26. Silence as Stillness.....345
27. The Apophatic Dimension.....346
28. The Kingdom and Authority.....347
29. The Woman and the Kingdom.....347
30. The Difficult Statement About Childbearing..... 348
31. Childbearing and the Female Vocation.....349
32. The Spiritual Meaning of Motherhood.....350
33. Mary and Motherhood.....350
34. Submission as a Temporary Order.....351
35. Authority Must Serve Life.....352
36. The Woman's Spiritual Maturity.....353
37. The Man's Spiritual Maturity.....353
38. The Two Orders.....354
The Ecclesial Order.....354
The Spiritual Order..... 355
39. The Living Spirit Beyond the Office.....355
40. The Restoration of the Feminine..... 356
Conclusion — Learning, Submission, and Spirit..... 357
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....359
Chapter 12 — Wives and Submission..... 359
Ephesians 5:22–24 and the Husband's Position Within

the Household Hierarchy..... 359
1. The Household Order..... 360
2. “Wives, Submit”..... 361
3. Submission Is Not Worship..... 362
4. The Husband as Head..... 363
5. Headship as Responsibility..... 364
6. Christ as the Pattern..... 365
7. The Husband's Sacrifice..... 365
8. The Wife's Submission..... 366
9. The Two Are One Flesh..... 367
10. Hierarchy Within Unity..... 368
11. The Masculine Principle..... 369
12. The Feminine Principle..... 370
13. The Two Principles in Marriage..... 370
14. The Husband Must Listen..... 372
15. The Wife Must Exercise Discernment..... 372
16. The Husband's Spiritual Responsibility..... 373
17. Authority as Service..... 374
18. The Difference Between Headship and Domination..... 374
Headship..... 375
Domination..... 375
19. The Wife Is Not the Husband's Property..... 375
20. The Husband Is Not the Wife's Savior..... 376
21. Submission and Freedom..... 377
22. The Husband and the Flesh..... 378
23. The Wife and the Flesh..... 378
24. Marriage as Spiritual Practice..... 379
25. The Androgynous Marriage..... 380

26. The Pauline and Thomasine Synthesis..... 381
27. The Kingdom Beyond Household Roles..... 382
28. The Husband as Guide Toward the Kingdom.....383
29. The Wife as Participant in the Kingdom..... 384
30. The Household as a Microcosm..... 384
31. The Cross as the Standard..... 385
32. The Hidden Feminine Within the Husband..... 386
33. The Hidden Masculine Within the Wife.....387
34. The Two Become One..... 387
35. The Spirit Beyond the Flesh..... 388
Conclusion — Headship Under the Cross.....389
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....391
Chapter 13 — The Teaching of Titus..... 391
Titus 2:3–5 — Female Conduct, Marriage, Discipline, and the Transmission of Tradition.....391
1. The Passage..... 392
2. The Older Woman as Teacher.....393
3. The Transmission of Tradition.....393
4. Wisdom Through Generations.....394
5. Female Mentorship..... 395
6. Reverent Conduct..... 396
7. The Tongue..... 397
8. Self-Control..... 398
9. The Feminine and Discipline.....398
10. Love of Husband..... 399
11. Love of Children.....400
12. The Mother as Spiritual Formator..... 400
13. Purity..... 401
14. Working Within the Household..... 402

15. Kindness..... 403
16. Submission to Husbands.....404
17. Submission and Character..... 404
18. The Husband's Responsibility..... 405
19. The Woman as Guardian of the Household.....406
20. The Transmission of Tradition.....407
21. The Hidden Authority of the Older Woman..... 407
22. The Masculine and Feminine Forms of Authority.. 408
Masculine authority.....408
Feminine authority..... 409
23. Authority Is Not the Same as Worth.....409
24. The Feminine and the Living Spirit.....410
25. The Masculine and the Living Spirit..... 411
26. Titus and the Androgynous Human.....412
27. The Household as a School of Spirit..... 413
28. The Problem of Hypocrisy..... 414
29. The Word of God and Reputation.....414
30. The Female as Witness..... 415
31. The Difference Between Formal and Embodied Teaching.....416
32. The Feminine as Tradition-Bearer.....417
33. Tradition and Discernment..... 417
34. The Feminine and Wisdom.....418
35. The Younger Woman..... 419
36. The Older Woman.....420
37. The Feminine Vocation as Generative.....421
38. The Masculine and Feminine Together..... 422
39. Beyond the Household.....422
40. Titus and Thomas..... 423

41. The Restoration of the Feminine..... 424
42. The Transformation of the Feminine.....425
43. The Final Unity.....426
Conclusion — The Teaching of Titus.....427
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....429
Chapter 14 — Submission and Spiritual Formation.....429
1. Submission as a Spiritual Discipline..... 430
2. The Will and the Ego.....431
3. Submission to God.....432
4. Christ as the Model.....432
5. Authority Under Authority..... 433
6. The Husband's Submission.....434
7. The Wife's Submission..... 435
8. Submission and Conscience..... 435
9. The Transformation of Desire..... 436
10. Submission and Self-Control.....437
11. The Reordering of the Embodied Person.....438
12. Flesh and Spirit.....438
13. Submission and the Feminine.....439
14. Submission and the Masculine..... 440
15. The Paradox of Christian Authority..... 441
16. Submission and the Cross.....442
17. Submission Is Not Humiliation..... 442
18. Submission Is Not Abuse..... 443
19. The Discipline of Receiving.....444
20. The Discipline of Obedience..... 445
21. The Paradox of Freedom..... 446
22. The Fleshly Master..... 447

23. The Living Spirit..... 448
24. Submission and Androgyny.....449
25. The Woman's Transformation.....449
26. The Man's Transformation.....450
27. Submission and Love.....451
28. Submission and Trust..... 451
29. The Limits of Earthly Authority.....452
30. Submission and Truth.....453
31. The Restoration of the Will..... 454
32. From Self-Will to Divine Will.....455
33. The Household as Training Ground..... 455
34. The Older and Younger.....456
35. Submission and Tradition.....457
36. The Silent Heart.....457
37. Submission and Apophatic Contemplation..... 458
38. The Masculine and Feminine Within Contemplation.... 459
39. The Submission of Christ..... 460
40. Authority and Submission as One Movement.....461
41. The Danger of Reversing the Order..... 462
42. The Spirit Orders the Flesh.....462
43. The Living Spirit and the Kingdom.....463
44. Submission as Preparation.....464
45. The Final Integration..... 465
Conclusion — Submission as Reordering.....466
Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order.....468
Chapter 15 — The Male as Spiritual Guide..... 468
1. The Meaning of Guidance..... 468
2. Headship as Guidance..... 469

3. Guidance Begins With Self-Government..... 470
4. The Male Under Authority..... 471
5. Christ as the Model of the Guide.....471
6. The Shepherd Image.....472
7. Guidance and Protection.....473
8. Guidance and Provision.....474
9. Guidance and Teaching.....475
10. The Male as Student..... 475
11. The Hidden Feminine in the Guide..... 476
12. The Guide and the Wife.....477
13. Counsel and Authority.....478
14. Guidance and Discernment.....478
15. The Guide and Discipline.....479
16. Discipline Without Cruelty.....480
17. The Guide as Servant.....481
18. The Male and Sacrifice.....482
19. The Male as Example..... 483
20. The Spiritual Guide and Hypocrisy.....483
21. The Guide and Repentance.....484
22. The Guide and the Living Spirit.....485
23. The Fleshly Male.....485
24. The Spiritual Male.....486
25. The Female and the Guide.....487
26. The Wife's Contribution..... 487
27. The Guide and the Feminine Principle.....488
28. The Guide and the Kingdom..... 489
29. Guidance Toward the Kingdom.....490
30. The Guide Cannot Save Another.....491

31. Coercion and Spirituality.....491
32. The Guide as Gardener.....492
33. The Guide and the Household.....493
34. The Guide and the Children.....493
35. The Mother as Complementary Guide.....494
36. The Guide and Tradition.....495
37. The Guide and Truth.....496
38. The Guide and Humility.....496
39. The Androgynous Guide.....497
Masculine.....497
Feminine.....497
40. From Male to Living Spirit.....498
41. The Woman's Parallel Journey.....499
42. The Final Purpose of Guidance.....499
Conclusion — The Male as Guide.....500
Part IV — The Feminine Spirit.....502
Chapter 16 — The Feminine Hidden Within the Male.502
1. The Problem of the Incomplete Male.....503
2. The Masculine Alone Is Insufficient.....504
3. The Hidden Feminine.....505
4. The Male as Both Active and Receptive.....506
5. The Feminine Is Not Biological Femaleness.....507
6. Receptivity.....508
7. The Male Before God.....509
8. Humility.....510
9. Compassion.....511
10. Tenderness.....511
11. Nurture.....512

12. The Male as Father..... 513
13. Authority and Receptivity..... 514
14. The Husband and the Feminine..... 514
15. The Masculine Without the Feminine..... 515
16. The Feminine Without the Masculine..... 516
17. The Two Principles as Complementary..... 517
18. The Spiritual Male and Prayer..... 518
19. The Feminine Within Contemplation..... 519
20. The Feminine and Apophatic Theology..... 519
21. The Inner Marriage..... 520
22. Thomas 22..... 521
23. Thomas 114 Revisited..... 522
24. The Male's “Female” Spirit..... 522
25. The False Fear of Feminization..... 523
26. The True Masculine..... 524
27. Strength and Gentleness..... 525
28. The Male as Protector of Life..... 526
29. Protection and Nurture..... 526
30. The Spiritual Father..... 527
31. The Male Disciple..... 528
32. Christ and Integrated Humanity..... 529
33. The Spirit Beyond Gender..... 530
34. The Male as Living Spirit..... 530
35. The Feminine as Gift..... 531
36. The Masculine as Gift..... 532
37. The Inner Restoration..... 533
38. Vulnerability as Strength..... 533
39. The Male and Love..... 534

40. The Living Spirit as Integrated Human..... 535
41. The Kingdom..... 536
42. The Male and the Woman..... 536
43. Beyond Domination..... 537
44. The Restoration of the Male..... 538
45. The Final Reconciliation..... 538
Conclusion — The Feminine Hidden Within the Male. 539
Part IV — The Feminine Spirit..... 541
Chapter 17 — The Feminine Desiring the Male..... 541
1. Desire as Movement..... 542
2. Bodily Desire..... 543
3. Desire Beyond Sexuality..... 543
4. The Desire to Be Known..... 544
5. The Desire to Know..... 545
6. The Male as Other..... 546
7. From Otherness to Communion..... 547
8. The Symbolic Masculine..... 548
9. The Desire for Strength..... 549
10. Protection and Trust..... 549
11. The Desire for Guidance..... 550
12. Guidance and Freedom..... 551
13. Desire for Union..... 551
14. One Flesh..... 552
15. The Feminine and the Masculine..... 553
16. The Limits of Complementarity..... 553
17. The Feminine and Receptivity..... 554
18. Receptivity Is Not Passivity..... 555
19. Desire Requires Discernment..... 556

20. The Male Must Become Worthy of Desire.....556
21. The Male as Answer to Desire..... 557
22. The Feminine as Answer to Male Desire..... 558
23. Desire and the Inner Androgynous Human..... 559
24. The Woman Becoming “Male”..... 560
25. The Male Becoming Feminine..... 560
26. The Inner and Outer Union.....561
Outer union..... 561
Inner union..... 561
27. Desire and Spiritual Transformation..... 562
28. Desire as a Mirror..... 563
29. From Possession to Communion..... 563
30. Sexual Desire and Spiritual Meaning..... 564
31. The Desire for Permanence..... 565
32. The Present Age.....566
33. The Kingdom and Union..... 566
34. Desire and God..... 567
35. The Feminine as Seeker.....568
36. The Male as Seeker.....569
37. The Two as One.....569
38. The Feminine Desire and Spiritual Androgyny.....570
39. Love as Transformation.....571
40. The Desire to Give.....572
41. The Spiritual Meaning of Union.....572
42. The Feminine and the Male Guide..... 573
43. The Beloved as Mirror.....574
44. Desire and the Living Spirit.....575
45. The Restoration of the Feminine..... 576

46. The Restoration of the Male..... 576
47. The Final Union.....577
Conclusion — The Feminine Desiring the Male.....578
Part IV — The Feminine Spirit..... 580
Chapter 18 — Submission as a Doorway.....580
1. The Isolated Self.....581
2. Autonomy and the Ego.....581
3. Submission as Relational Opening.....582
4. The Self Is Not Destroyed..... 583
5. From “I” to “We”.....584
6. The Pauline Framework.....585
7. The Husband's Parallel Submission.....585
8. The Highest Authority.....586
9. Submission and Trust..... 587
10. The Husband Must Become Trustworthy.....588
11. Submission and Safety.....589
12. Submission and Vulnerability.....589
13. The Doorway of Vulnerability.....590
14. Submission and Love.....591
15. The Feminine Principle of Receptivity.....592
16. Receptivity and Transformation..... 592
17. Submission Is Reciprocal in Love.....593
18. The Difference Between Submission and Servility.594
19. The Difference Between Submission and Fear..... 595
20. The Difference Between Submission and Coercion596
21. The Transformation of Desire..... 596
22. Dependence and Interdependence..... 597
23. The One Flesh Mystery..... 598

24. Submission and the Androgynous Human..... 598
25. The Woman Receives the Masculine.....599
26. The Man Receives the Feminine..... 600
27. The Inner and Outer Doorway.....601
28. Submission and the Ego..... 601
29. The Household as an Ascetic School..... 602
30. The Feminine and Spiritual Receptivity.....603
31. The Male and Spiritual Initiative.....604
32. The Complete Human.....604
33. Submission and Freedom.....605
34. Belonging.....606
35. The Spiritual Meaning of Belonging.....607
36. Submission and God.....607
37. The Husband as Doorway.....608
38. The Wife as Doorway.....609
39. The Two as Mutual Teachers.....609
40. The Restoration of the Feminine..... 610
41. The Restoration of the Masculine.....611
42. The Doorway to Unity.....611
Conclusion — Submission as a Doorway..... 612
Part IV — The Feminine Spirit..... 614
Chapter 19 — The Male Who Liberates..... 614
1. Liberation Rather Than Domination.....615
2. The Meaning of Liberation.....616
3. The Guide Must Point Beyond Himself..... 617
4. Christ as the Model.....618
5. The Woman as a Spiritual Person.....619
6. The Hidden Identity.....620

7. The Male as Midwife of the Spirit.....620
8. Liberation Through Knowledge..... 621
9. The Woman Who Learns.....622
10. Teaching Without Enslaving.....623
11. The Woman's Discernment.....624
12. The Test of the Male Guide.....624
13. Freedom and Trust.....625
14. The Husband's Responsibility..... 626
15. Liberation From Fear.....626
16. Authority as Security.....627
17. The Male Who Creates Space..... 628
18. The Woman's Strength.....629
19. The Fear of a Strong Woman.....629
20. The Masculine and Feminine Cooperation.....630
21. The Woman's Hidden Masculine.....631
22. The Male's Hidden Feminine.....632
23. Mutual Transformation.....632
24. The Thomasine Principle.....633
25. Mary and Liberation.....634
26. “Making Her Male”.....634
27. From Female to Integrated Human.....635
28. The Male as Catalyst..... 636
29. Liberation From the Ego.....636
30. The Woman's Own Responsibility..... 637
31. The Male's Own Responsibility.....638
32. The Guide Who Can Release.....639
33. Liberation and Love.....639
34. The Male as Servant of the Feminine Spirit.....640

35. The Feminine Spirit Is Not His Possession..... 641
36. The Male as Protector of Spiritual Freedom..... 641
37. Liberation Through Love.....642
38. The Male Who Points Beyond Himself.....643
39. The Doorway to the Kingdom..... 643
40. The Final Integration..... 644
Conclusion — The Male Who Liberates.....645
Part IV — The Feminine Spirit..... 647
Chapter 20 — The Woman Who Becomes Living.....648
1. The Woman in the Flesh.....649
2. The Body Is Not the Whole Human..... 649
3. The Female Body Remains.....650
4. Peter's Objection.....651
5. Jesus' Response.....652
6. From Exclusion to Inclusion.....652
7. The Meaning of “Male”.....653
8. Male as Spiritual Symbol..... 654
9. But Male Is Not the Final Identity.....655
10. The Androgynous Spirit..... 655
11. The Awakening.....656
12. The Living Spirit..... 657
13. From Flesh to Spirit.....658
14. The Body as Vessel.....659
15. The Woman Does Not Need to Hate Her Body.....659
16. The Transformation of Desire..... 660
17. From Being Desired to Desiring Truth.....661
18. Mary as Disciple.....662
19. The Woman Who Learns.....662

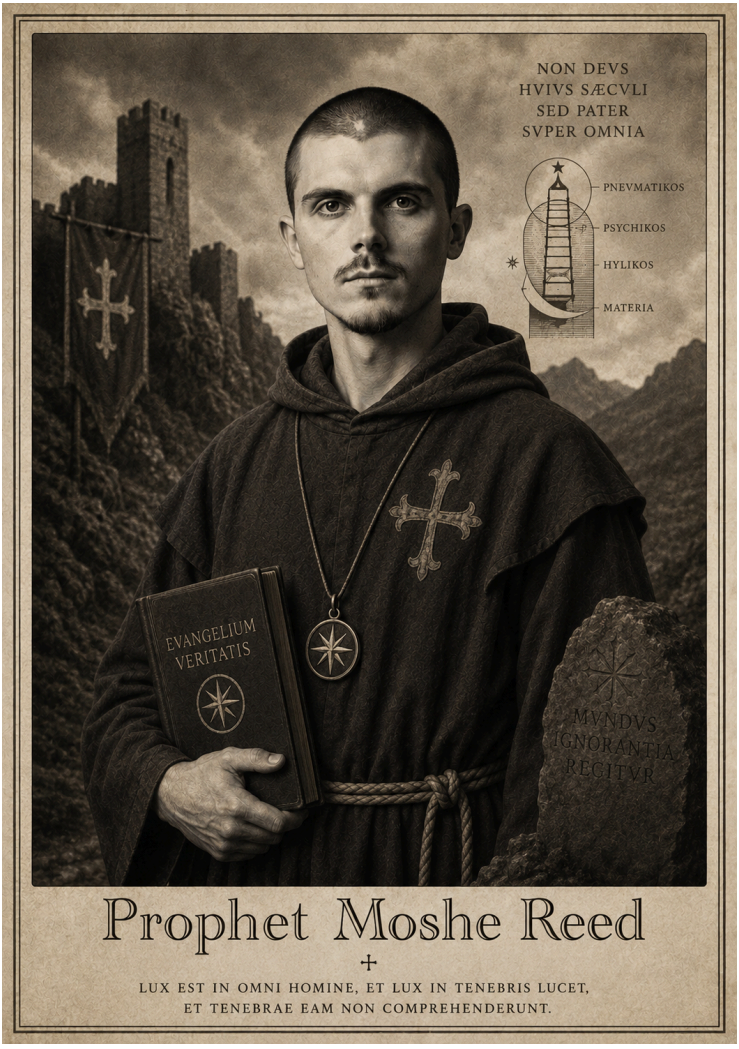
20. The Woman Who Becomes Wise..... 663
21. The Restoration of Agency.....664
22. The Woman and the Male Guide..... 664
23. The Guide Must Eventually Become Unnecessary. 665
24. Direct Knowledge.....666
25. The Hidden Spirit..... 666
26. The Seed of Spirit..... 667
27. The Woman Beyond Social Role.....668
28. The Woman Beyond Marriage.....669
29. The Woman Beyond Motherhood..... 669
30. The Woman Beyond Sexuality..... 670
31. The Woman Who Becomes Free..... 671
32. Freedom and Responsibility..... 671
33. The Woman Who Becomes Responsible.....672
34. The Integration of Submission..... 672
35. The Woman Who Knows Herself.....673
36. The Woman Who Knows God.....674
37. The Woman and the Kingdom.....675
38. The Feminine Beyond the Binary.....675
39. The Androgynous Human..... 675
40. The Living Woman.....676
41. The Meaning of Life.....677
42. The Woman Who Awakens..... 678
43. The Female and the Divine Image.....678
44. The Male and Female Reconciled..... 679
45. Mary as Symbol.....679
46. The Final Meaning of “Male”..... 680
47. The Woman as Living Spirit.....681

48. The Kingdom Beyond the Body.....681
49. The Final Liberation.....682
50. The Woman Who Becomes Living.....683
Conclusion — Mary and the Awakening of the Feminine.... 684
Part V — The Restoration of the Androgynous Human 686
Chapter 21 — Inside and Outside.....686
1. The Two.....687
2. Inside.....688
3. Outside.....689
4. The Outer Male and Female.....690
5. The Inner Male and Female.....691
6. The Outer and Inner Become Mirrors.....691
7. Thomas 22.....692
8. Inside Like Outside.....693
9. Outside Like Inside.....693
10. The Reconciliation of Inside and Outside.....694
11. The Problem of Hypocrisy.....695
12. Integration as the Cure for Hypocrisy.....696
13. The Mask.....696
14. Beyond the Mask.....697
15. The Masculine and Feminine Reconciled.....698
16. The Outer Marriage and Inner Marriage.....699
17. The Man Who Finds the Feminine Within.....700
18. The Woman Who Finds the Masculine Within.....700
19. The External Other.....701
20. Desire as Recognition.....701
21. The Restoration of Desire.....702
22. Above and Below.....703

23. Spirit and Body....704
24. Body and Spirit....704
25. The Present Age and the Kingdom....705
26. The Living Spirit....706
27. The Female Who Becomes Male....706
28. The Male Who Becomes Feminine....707
29. Neither Male Nor Female Alone....708
30. The Reconciliation of Authority and Submission....708
31. Submission Within the Inner Human....709
32. Authority Within....710
33. Inside and Outside as One....710
34. Knowledge Becoming Life....711
35. The Inner Kingdom....712
36. The Outer Kingdom....712
37. The Two Become One....713
38. Unity Does Not Mean Sameness....714
39. The Mystery of Distinction....714
40. The Integrated Human....715
41. The Final Reconciliation....716
Conclusion — Inside and Outside....716
Part V — The Restoration of the Androgynous Human 718
Chapter 22 — Above and Below....718
1. The Meaning of Above....719
2. The Meaning of Below....720
3. The Problem of Separation....721
4. Spirit in the Body....721
5. The Body as Temple....722
6. The Heavenly Origin of the Spirit....722

7. The Earthly Condition..... 723
8. The Descent of the Heavenly.....724
9. The Ascent of the Earthly.....725
10. Above Gives Direction..... 726
11. Below Provides Practice..... 726
12. The Human as Mediator..... 727
13. Above and Below Within the Human.....728
14. Spirit Governs Desire..... 729
15. The Transformation of Sexuality.....730
16. Male and Female as Above and Below..... 730
17. The Male Descends Into Service.....731
18. The Female Ascends Through Awakening.....732
19. The Two Movements Meet.....733
20. The Cross as Symbol..... 733
21. The Heavenly and Earthly Human..... 734
22. The Kingdom Within and Beyond.....735
23. Above Is Not Mere Escape.....735
24. Below Is Not the Final Reality..... 736
25. The Present Age.....737
26. The Toll of Embodiment.....737
27. The Spirit Above Fear..... 738
28. The Higher and Lower Self..... 739
29. The Restoration of Order.....739
30. The Pneumatic Human..... 740
31. The Heavenly Seed.....741
32. The Woman and the Heavenly Seed.....741
33. The Male and the Heavenly Seed.....742
34. Above and Below as Transformation..... 742

35. The Human as Temple of Reconciliation..... 743
36. The Inner Ascent..... 744
37. The Outer Descent..... 744
38. Heaven and Earth in Marriage..... 745
39. Above and Below in Authority..... 745
40. Above and Below in Submission..... 746
41. The Guide and the Heaven..... 747
42. The Woman and the Heaven..... 747
43. The Human Between Worlds..... 748
44. Homesickness for the Above..... 748
45. The Descent of Wisdom..... 749
46. Above and Below Reconciled..... 750
47. The Final Transcendence..... 750
48. The Living Spirit..... 751
49. The Restoration of the Androgynous Human..... 751
50. The Final Ascent..... 752
Conclusion — Above and Below..... 753



Reverend Moshe Reed

Copyright & License

The Androgynous Spirit VOLUME I of III
Copyright © 2026 by The Logos / Moshe Reed
ISBN:

This book is intended for informational, educational, and spiritual purposes only. It does not provide medical, legal, or professional advice and makes no claims to prevent, treat, or cure any disease or condition. Readers should consult a qualified professional for any health or legal concerns.

This work is licensed under the Creative Commons Attribution-ShareAlike 4.0 International License.

To view a copy of this license, visit:
https://creativecommons.org/licenses/by-sa/4.0/

This means you are free to:
* **Share** — copy and redistribute the material in any medium or format
* **Adapt** — remix, transform, and build upon the material

for any purpose, even commercially.

The licensor cannot revoke these freedoms as long as you follow the license terms.

Under the following terms:
* **Attribution** — You must give appropriate credit, credit must be given to the Logos. Provide a link to the license, and indicate if changes were made. You may do so in any reasonable manner, but not in any way that suggests the licensor endorses you or your use.
* **ShareAlike** — If you remix, transform, or build upon the material, you must distribute your contributions under the same license as the original.

All conditioned phenomena are like a dream, an illusion, a bubble, a shadow, like dew or a flash of lightning; thus should we perceive them.

Preface — The Mystery of Male and Female

Humanity has always encountered itself through the mystery of male and female. The body presents a visible distinction: one is born male or female, inhabits a particular body, experiences particular desires, and enters into particular relationships. Yet the ancient spiritual traditions preserved in the Christian scriptures and the Gospel of Thomas raise a deeper question: **Is the visible distinction of the flesh identical with the ultimate identity of the human being?**

This book begins with the proposition that it is not.

The distinction between male and female belongs first to embodied existence. It is real within the visible world, but the spiritual human cannot be reduced to the characteristics of the body. The human being possesses an inward dimension that cannot be adequately described by biological sex alone. The deepest self is encountered in Spirit.

This distinction becomes especially significant when the sayings attributed to Jesus in the Gospel of Thomas are placed beside the New Testament teachings concerning flesh and Spirit. Thomas speaks of making the two one and, in its final saying, speaks mysteriously of Mary being “made male” so that she may become a “living spirit.” Paul speaks of the conflict between flesh and Spirit, of the transformation of the

believer, and ultimately of a condition in which ordinary distinctions no longer define one's standing before God.

These texts do not present a simple rejection of biological sex. Rather, they invite a distinction between **the human being as embodied creature and the human being as spiritual reality**.

The body is male or female. The Spirit is deeper.

This distinction also provides the foundation for understanding the ancient symbolism of masculine and feminine. In this work, “male” and “female” are therefore used on two levels. The first is biological: the actual sex of the embodied person. The second is mystical: masculine and feminine as symbolic principles within spiritual existence.

The spiritual human is consequently understood as possessing a mystery that cannot be exhausted by either category.

The true male is not merely a male body. The true female is not merely a female body.

Each contains a spiritual depth that transcends the external form.

This is the meaning we will explore through the language of the **androgynous spirit**.

The word *androgynous* here does not mean that biological sex disappears. Nor does it mean that male and female become biologically indistinguishable. It refers instead to the

reconciliation of masculine and feminine within the spiritual human. What appears divided in the flesh can become unified in the Spirit.

This idea finds one of its most striking expressions in the Gospel of Thomas:

> "When you make the two one…"

The saying places the union of opposites at the center of spiritual transformation. Inside and outside, above and below, male and female are brought into a single reality.

The final saying of Thomas presents the mystery from another direction. Peter objects to Mary's presence among the disciples, declaring that women are not worthy of life. Jesus responds by describing her transformation into "male" so that she may become a "living spirit."

Whatever historical interpretation one assigns to the saying, its symbolic structure is unmistakable: **Mary's bodily identity does not represent the final limit of her spiritual destiny.**

The woman must pass beyond the limitation represented by the feminine condition of the flesh and become a living spirit.

This book interprets that transformation through the broader biblical distinction between flesh and Spirit.

Paul writes that those who live according to the flesh have their minds set upon the things of the flesh, while those who

live according to the Spirit set their minds upon the things of the Spirit. The flesh and Spirit are presented as competing orientations of human existence. The fundamental spiritual struggle therefore does not concern whether one possesses a male or female body. It concerns whether the human being remains governed by the lower orientation of the flesh or awakens to the Spirit.

This provides the foundation for the central distinction of this work:

Sex belongs to the body.
Identity reaches into the Spirit.
Transformation occurs when the Spirit is no longer imprisoned by the limitations of the flesh.

The Pauline writings also introduce another dimension: the relationship between male and female within earthly life. Marriage, authority, submission, responsibility, and mutual obligations are treated as part of the ordered life of the community. These teachings must therefore be considered alongside the mystical teaching concerning the transcendence of ordinary distinctions.

The earthly order and the spiritual order are related, but they are not identical.

A woman may remain a woman in the flesh while undergoing a transformation of the spirit. A man may remain a man in the flesh while discovering within himself dimensions traditionally associated with the feminine. The goal is not the

destruction of either sex but the **integration of the spiritual qualities represented by both**.

Thus the masculine and feminine become complementary rather than ultimately antagonistic.

The spiritually mature male does not deny the feminine within himself.

The spiritually mature female does not remain imprisoned by the limitations attributed to the feminine condition.

Both move toward the same spiritual destination: **the living human restored to unity**.

This restoration is ultimately connected to the Christian language of resurrection. Paul does not envision salvation as the eternal preservation of the present condition of the flesh. He speaks of transformation, of a heavenly dwelling, and of the transformation of the lowly body. The believer's ultimate citizenship is elsewhere.

The present body is therefore not the whole of the human story.

The present world is not the final kingdom.

And the present distinction between fleshly identities does not exhaust the mystery of the person.

The purpose of this book is consequently neither to glorify masculinity nor to condemn femininity. It is to investigate an ancient spiritual proposition:

The human being is more than the body through which the human being presently appears.

Male and female belong to the visible order.

Spirit belongs to the deeper order.

The mystery begins when the two are distinguished without being separated, and when the human being learns to recognize that the ultimate goal of spiritual existence is not domination of one sex by another, but the restoration of the divided human into wholeness.

The journey of this book will therefore move from **flesh to Spirit, division to unity, male and female to the One, and the visible human to the living spirit**.

At the center of that journey stands the ancient mystery:

What is the human being when the body no longer defines the whole of the human being?

That is the mystery of male and female.

And that is the mystery of the **Androgynous Spirit**.

Part I — The Two Natures

Chapter 1 — Flesh and Spirit

The first distinction necessary for understanding the mystery of the human being is the distinction between **flesh and Spirit**.

The human being appears in the world through the flesh. We possess a body, inhabit a particular place, experience hunger and desire, become subject to illness and aging, and eventually die. The body is therefore the most immediate reality through which human existence is experienced.

Yet the biblical tradition repeatedly insists that the visible body does not constitute the whole of the human being.

There is another principle within humanity: **Spirit**.

The distinction between flesh and Spirit is therefore not simply a distinction between two substances. It is also a distinction between two orientations, two modes of existence, and two ways of understanding what gives life its ultimate meaning.

The flesh belongs to the visible order.

The Spirit belongs to the invisible order.

The flesh is subject to time.

The Spirit reaches beyond the limitations of time.

The flesh dies.

The Spirit gives life.

This distinction provides the foundation for everything that follows.

---

1. The Human Being in the Flesh

Human existence begins with embodiment.

Before a person can speak of spiritual awakening, heavenly citizenship, resurrection, or union with God, that person exists as a creature of flesh. The body is not an abstraction. It is the concrete vessel through which consciousness encounters the world.

The body eats, sleeps, works, reproduces, suffers, experiences pleasure, and eventually returns to the earth.

Genesis expresses this earthly condition through the language of dust:

> "For dust you are and to dust you shall return."

The body therefore belongs to a cycle of generation and dissolution.

It comes from the earth and returns to the earth.

This does not necessarily mean that the body is evil. Rather, it means that the body is **finite**.

The fundamental problem is not simply that the human being possesses a body. The problem arises when the human being mistakes the temporary bodily condition for the entirety of what the human being is.

The flesh can become an identity.

It can become a prison of perception.

It can become the center around which desire, fear, status, competition, pleasure, and survival revolve.

The person begins to say, in effect:

I am only this body.

The spiritual traditions examined in this book challenge that conclusion.

---

2. Flesh as a Condition

The biblical meaning of "flesh" is broader than merely biological tissue.

Paul frequently uses **sarx**, "flesh," to describe humanity when oriented away from the Spirit.

In Romans, he contrasts those who live according to the flesh with those who live according to the Spirit:

> “Those who live according to the flesh set their minds on the things of the flesh, but those who live according to the Spirit set their minds on the things of the Spirit.”

The distinction therefore becomes ethical and spiritual.

To live according to the flesh means to organize existence around the impulses and limitations of the lower condition.

To live according to the Spirit means to allow another principle to govern existence.

This is why flesh should not be reduced to the physical body itself.

A physical body can become an instrument of spiritual life.

Likewise, a person can possess a body while remaining inwardly dominated by passions, hatred, greed, pride, fear, and ignorance.

The problem is therefore not simply **having flesh**.

The problem is **living according to the flesh**.

This distinction is essential.

Otherwise, one might conclude that salvation requires hatred of the body. The deeper teaching is more subtle: salvation requires liberation from enslavement to the lower orientation of existence.

3. The Spirit Gives Life

Against the flesh stands Spirit.

Jesus says:

> "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh is no help at all."

The statement establishes a fundamental hierarchy.

The body possesses biological life, but the Spirit gives a deeper form of life.

The body breathes, moves, eats, and reproduces. Yet none of these activities by themselves establish the ultimate purpose of human existence.

Spiritual life concerns the awakening of the person to God.

Spirit therefore represents more than an invisible substance hidden inside the body.

Spirit represents **life originating beyond the merely material order**.

This is why the Gospel of John repeatedly associates Spirit with life, light, truth, birth, and knowledge.

The Spirit awakens.

The Spirit illuminates.

The Spirit gives perception.

The Spirit establishes a relationship with the divine.

The Spirit makes possible a form of existence that cannot be reduced to bodily survival.

---

4. Flesh and Spirit as Two Orientations

The distinction becomes clearer when flesh and Spirit are understood as two orientations.

The flesh asks:

What can I possess?

The Spirit asks:

What is true?

The flesh asks:

What can I consume?

The Spirit asks:

What gives life?

The flesh asks:

How can I preserve myself?

The Spirit asks:

What is the source of my existence?

The flesh seeks security through attachment to temporary things.

The Spirit seeks freedom through knowledge of what is eternal.

The flesh is concerned with appearance.

The Spirit is concerned with reality.

The flesh is dominated by fear of death.

The Spirit looks beyond death.

This opposition appears throughout the New Testament.

Paul describes the desires of flesh and Spirit as being opposed to one another:

> "For the desires of the flesh are against the Spirit, and the desires of the Spirit are against the flesh."

The spiritual life therefore involves an internal struggle.

The human being finds competing movements within consciousness.

One movement pulls toward immediate gratification.

Another pulls toward truth.

One seeks domination.

Another seeks love.

One seeks possession.

Another seeks freedom.

One fears death.

Another trusts in life beyond death.

---

5. The Flesh and the Present Age

The flesh is also connected with the present world.

The New Testament frequently describes the present age as characterized by darkness, deception, corruption, and opposition to God.

John speaks of the **ruler of this world**.

Paul speaks of the **god of this age** who blinds minds.

Ephesians speaks of the **cosmic powers of this present darkness**.

These passages create a distinction between the visible world as presently experienced and the divine reality toward which humanity is called.

The human being is therefore situated within a world that is not yet fully reconciled.

This explains the persistent experience of contradiction.

Human beings desire peace but produce conflict.

They desire justice but practice domination.

They desire permanence but inhabit a world of decay.

They desire knowledge but repeatedly embrace deception.

They desire life but remain subject to death.

The human condition contains a contradiction.

The Spirit recognizes the contradiction.

The flesh often attempts to accommodate itself to it.

---

6. The Body as Temporary Dwelling

Paul uses an especially powerful image in **2 Corinthians 5**.

He describes the present body as an **earthly tent**.

A tent is a dwelling, but it is not a permanent house.

It can be erected.

It can be inhabited.

It can be dismantled.

The image therefore transforms the way the body is understood.

The body is a dwelling of the present age.

It is real.

It is valuable.

It is the place in which the present life occurs.

But it is temporary.

Paul then speaks of a heavenly dwelling.

The contrast is not between something real and something imaginary. It is between the **temporary dwelling and the enduring dwelling**.

This allows the spiritual person to understand earthly existence without making earthly existence absolute.

The body matters.

But the body is not the final horizon.

---

7. “Away From the Body”

Paul goes further:

> “We would rather be away from the body and at home with the Lord.”

This passage has frequently attracted mystical interpretations because it appears to distinguish the believer's deepest destiny from the present bodily condition.

The important point for this work is not to establish a crude rejection of embodiment.

Paul elsewhere speaks of resurrection and transformation.

Instead, the passage establishes a hierarchy of identity.

The believer's relationship with God is more fundamental than the present bodily condition.

The body is therefore not the ultimate definition of the person.

This becomes particularly important when considering the question of male and female.

If biological sex belongs to the bodily order, then the spiritual identity of the human being cannot be completely exhausted by biological sex.

The body is male.

The body is female.

But the Spirit reaches beyond both categories.

---

8. Male and Female Within the Flesh

The distinction between male and female belongs naturally to embodied existence.

Human beings encounter one another as men and women.

Biological differences are real.

Social relationships develop around those differences.

Marriage, reproduction, family, authority, and social responsibilities are all experienced within the embodied order.

But the spiritual question is different:

What is a human being before God?

Here the New Testament introduces a radical principle.

Paul writes:

> “There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”

Paul does not deny that Jews and Greeks, slaves and free people, men and women physically exist.

Rather, he denies that these distinctions determine one's ultimate standing within the divine reality.

The distinction remains within the flesh.

The distinction does not remain absolute within the Spirit.

This is essential for the theology of the Androgynous Spirit.

---

9. The Spirit Beyond Sexual Identity

The spiritual human therefore cannot be reduced to:

male

or

female.

The body possesses sex.

The Spirit possesses a deeper identity.

This does not require pretending that biological sex does not exist.

It means refusing to treat biological sex as the final metaphysical definition of the person.

The mystery is therefore not:

How can a man become biologically female?

Nor is it:

How can a woman become biologically male?

The deeper question is:

How can the embodied human become spiritually whole?

This is where the symbolism of androgyny becomes meaningful.

Androgyny, in the spiritual sense used throughout this book, refers to the reconciliation of masculine and feminine dimensions within the deeper human identity.

The perfected human is not spiritually incomplete merely because the body is male or female.

Instead, the masculine and feminine become integrated within the Spirit.

10. The Inner Conflict

Romans 7 gives perhaps the most psychologically powerful description of the human struggle.

Paul describes a conflict between what he understands and what he experiences within himself.

He recognizes the good yet encounters another force within his members.

The result is the cry:

> "Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death?"

The question is not merely biological.

It is existential.

Why does the human being desire the good while repeatedly doing what contradicts it?

Why does consciousness recognize truth while desire pulls in another direction?

Why does the human being long for freedom while repeatedly returning to bondage?

The answer given by Paul is ultimately found in divine liberation.

The Spirit provides the possibility of a new mode of existence.

The person is no longer required to remain permanently governed by the lower orientation.

---

11. The Spirit as Awakening

The Spirit can therefore be understood as the principle of awakening.

The flesh sees the immediate.

The Spirit perceives the deeper.

The flesh identifies with the temporary.

The Spirit recognizes the eternal.

The flesh is fascinated by appearances.

The Spirit seeks truth.

The flesh is bound to the present age.

The Spirit points toward the coming kingdom.

This awakening is not merely intellectual.

A person can possess enormous amounts of information while remaining spiritually asleep.

Spiritual knowledge must transform perception and orientation.

The awakened person begins to recognize that the visible world is not the entirety of reality.

The person begins to see the limitations of desire.

The person begins to recognize the impermanence of bodily existence.

The person begins to seek what cannot be destroyed by time.

This is the beginning of spiritual freedom.

---

12. Flesh Is Not the Final Human

The central thesis of this chapter can therefore be stated simply:

The flesh is the present condition of human existence, but it is not the final definition of the human being.

The body is born.

The body changes.

The body experiences pleasure and pain.

The body ages.

The body dies.

But the spiritual tradition points beyond this sequence toward another form of existence.

Paul speaks of transformation.

Jesus speaks of Spirit giving life.

The Gospel of Thomas speaks of becoming a **living spirit**.

The Christian hope ultimately points toward a human existence no longer governed by corruption and death.

Thus the body should neither be worshiped nor despised.

It should be understood.

It is the temporary dwelling in which the spiritual journey occurs.

---

13. The Beginning of the Androgynous Mystery

Once flesh and Spirit have been distinguished, the mystery of male and female can be approached differently.

If male and female belong to the embodied order, then neither is the complete definition of the spiritual human.

The male body does not contain the entire mystery of masculinity.

The female body does not contain the entire mystery of femininity.

Both are expressions of embodied existence.

The Spirit reaches beyond the division.

This provides the foundation for the teaching that the two must become one.

The masculine and feminine are not ultimately enemies.

They are dimensions of a divided human reality awaiting reconciliation.

The male must discover the feminine dimension within spiritual wholeness.

The female must discover the masculine dimension within spiritual wholeness.

Neither transformation requires the destruction of the body.

The transformation occurs at the level of Spirit.

The goal is therefore not sexual confusion.

The goal is **spiritual integration**.

---

14. From Flesh to Spirit

The movement of the spiritual life can now be expressed as a journey:

Flesh → awareness → struggle → awakening → Spirit → integration → unity.

The person begins in identification with the body.

Then comes awareness that bodily existence is temporary.

Then comes recognition of the conflict between flesh and Spirit.

Then comes awakening.

Then comes the discovery of the Spirit.

Then comes integration of what was divided.

Finally comes unity.

The Gospel of Thomas expresses the final stage through the language of making the two one.

The Pauline writings express it through life in the Spirit and unity in Christ.

The two traditions use different vocabularies, histories, and theological frameworks, but they provide material for a common mystical question:

What happens when the human being ceases to identify the visible order as the entirety of reality?

The answer developed in this book is that the human being begins to discover the **living Spirit**.

Conclusion — The Two Natures

Humanity exists between two horizons.

One is the horizon of flesh:

birth, desire, suffering, division, aging, and death.

The other is the horizon of Spirit:

life, illumination, freedom, unity, transformation, and communion with the divine.

The body is the place where the human being presently lives.

The Spirit is the principle through which the human being awakens beyond the limitations of the present condition.

Therefore:

The flesh is temporary.
The Spirit gives life.
The body is not the whole human.
Sex is not the whole identity.
The present age is not the final kingdom.
Division is not the final state.

The mystery of male and female can only be understood after this distinction has been established.

For the question is no longer simply:

“Am I male or female?”

The deeper question becomes:

“What am I beneath the distinctions of the flesh?”

And the answer toward which the subsequent chapters will move is:

a living spirit seeking restoration to unity.

Part I — The Two Natures

Chapter 2 — Male and Female in the Flesh

The distinction between male and female is one of the first distinctions encountered in embodied existence. Before a person understands philosophy, theology, or metaphysics, the body already presents itself as sexed. Humanity appears in the world through male and female bodies, and this distinction shapes reproduction, family, attraction, social relationships, and much of ordinary human experience.

Yet if the flesh is temporary, then the distinctions belonging to the flesh must also be understood within their proper limits.

Male and female are real within embodied existence.

They are not necessarily the ultimate description of the human being.

This distinction is foundational to the theology of the Androgynous Spirit.

The purpose is not to deny biological sex, nor to treat embodiment as meaningless. Rather, it is to distinguish **what belongs to the present bodily order from what belongs to the deeper spiritual identity of the person**.

---

1. The First Division

Genesis describes humanity as created:

> “male and female.”

The distinction is therefore ancient within biblical anthropology.

The male and female bodies participate in the continuation of embodied life. They possess different reproductive functions and exist within a relationship of biological complementarity.

The body therefore establishes a primary distinction:

male and female.

But the biblical tradition also contains another movement: distinctions that are fundamental within earthly existence do not necessarily remain ultimate within salvation.

Paul can speak of:

> "neither male nor female"

while simultaneously recognizing men and women as embodied persons.

The apparent contradiction disappears when the two statements are understood at different levels.

At the level of flesh:

male and female exist.

At the level of spiritual standing:

neither possesses an ultimate superiority before God.

At the level of final spiritual identity:

the human being is restored beyond the divisions that characterize the present condition.

---

2. The Body as Embodied Identity

Biological sex is therefore not imaginary.

The body has structure.

The body has reproductive functions.

The body undergoes sexual development.

The body experiences attraction and desire.

The body belongs to the created order.

But the spiritual problem begins when bodily characteristics become the entire definition of the person.

A human being can begin to understand existence entirely through the body:

I am my sex.

I am my appearance.

I am my attractiveness.

I am my sexual capacity.

I am what others desire in me.

The spiritual perspective challenges this reduction.

The body is something the human being **inhabits**.

It is not necessarily the entirety of what the human being **is**.

This distinction becomes especially important in a theology that understands the present body as temporary.

---

3. Male and Female as Embodied Conditions

Within this framework, “male” and “female” can be understood first as descriptions of embodied conditions.

The male body has its own biological structure.

The female body has its own biological structure.

Neither description exhausts the spiritual person.

A male body does not tell us everything about the soul.

A female body does not tell us everything about the soul.

The visible form is therefore a sign rather than the whole reality.

The body reveals something about the person while simultaneously concealing the deeper mystery of the person.

This is characteristic of embodied existence itself.

The visible points toward the invisible.

The temporal points toward the eternal.

The particular points toward the universal.

The body becomes the place where the spiritual mystery is concealed and revealed simultaneously.

---

4. Desire

Sexual desire is one of the strongest forces associated with embodied existence.

Desire pulls the human being outward.

The person sees another body and experiences attraction.

The mind imagines union.

The body seeks pleasure.

The emotions seek attachment.

The individual begins to organize existence around another person.

Desire therefore possesses extraordinary power.

It can create intimacy, marriage, family, affection, loyalty, and sacrifice.

But desire can also become possessiveness.

It can become lust.

It can become jealousy.

It can become obsession.

It can become domination.

The same faculty through which human beings form relationships can become a source of bondage.

This is why the spiritual traditions place such emphasis upon the regulation and transformation of desire.

The problem is not necessarily that desire exists.

The problem is that desire can become the **master of consciousness**.

---

5. Desire and the Flesh

Paul's language of flesh and Spirit becomes especially relevant here.

The flesh seeks immediate satisfaction.

The Spirit seeks a higher ordering of desire.

This does not mean that every bodily desire is inherently evil.

Hunger is natural.

Rest is natural.

Sexual attraction is natural.

The existence of a desire does not itself constitute spiritual failure.

The spiritual question is:

Who governs the desire?

Does desire govern the person?

Or does the person govern desire?

Does attraction become love?

Or does attraction become possession?

Does sexuality become communion?

Or does it become consumption?

Does the body become an instrument of relationship?

Or does another person become merely an object for satisfying the self?

The movement from flesh to Spirit therefore involves the transformation of desire.

---

6. The Hierarchy of the Flesh

Human beings naturally create hierarchies.

We compare strength.

We compare beauty.

We compare wealth.

We compare intelligence.

We compare sexual attractiveness.

We compare social status.

Male and female can become incorporated into these hierarchies.

One sex can attempt to dominate the other.

The stronger can dominate the weaker.

The socially powerful can exploit the socially vulnerable.

The body becomes a basis for status.

The spiritual problem is not merely that hierarchy exists.

It is that human beings frequently transform differences into **absolute superiority and inferiority**.

A difference becomes a ranking.

A ranking becomes domination.

Domination becomes oppression.

And oppression becomes normalized as though it were part of the structure of reality itself.

The spiritual perspective challenges this tendency.

The existence of difference does not automatically establish the moral superiority of one person over another.

---

7. The Biblical Household Order

The New Testament contains teachings concerning the relationship between men and women that must be taken seriously within this framework.

The Pastoral Epistles instruct women concerning submission and household conduct.

Ephesians contains the instruction:

> "Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord."

These texts describe an earthly social order.

They concern marriage, family, authority, responsibility, and community.

They therefore belong to the **embodied order**.

But the same New Testament tradition also establishes spiritual equality before God.

Paul writes:

> "There is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus."

The result is a tension that cannot simply be erased.

There can be an earthly distinction of roles without making one sex ontologically more valuable than the other.

There can be relational hierarchy without claiming that the subordinate person possesses an inferior spirit.

This distinction becomes essential to the theology developed in this book.

8. Authority and Responsibility

Authority in its spiritual form cannot mean merely the ability to command.

True authority carries responsibility.

The one who leads must bear responsibility for those entrusted to him.

The New Testament therefore places substantial demands upon the male within the household tradition.

The husband is not merely given authority.

He is commanded to love.

He is commanded to sacrifice.

He is commanded to care.

He is commanded to treat his wife as his own body.

Thus hierarchy without responsibility becomes tyranny.

Authority without love becomes domination.

Submission without dignity becomes degradation.

The spiritual interpretation must therefore distinguish **ordered relationship** from **mere coercion**.

The ideal male is not the man who possesses the greatest power over others.

The ideal male is the man whose strength is transformed into responsibility.

---

9. The Male as Guide

Within the framework of this book, the male can symbolically represent the principle of **guidance, stability, protection, and ordered responsibility**.

This does not mean that every man automatically possesses these qualities.

Biological maleness does not guarantee spiritual masculinity.

A man may be physically male while being ruled by cowardice, lust, vanity, cruelty, or selfishness.

The spiritually mature male must therefore become something more than biologically male.

He must become **integrated**.

His strength must be governed by wisdom.

His authority must be governed by love.

His desire must be governed by discipline.

His masculinity must be integrated with the feminine dimensions of compassion, receptivity, tenderness, intuition, and relational awareness.

The mature male is therefore not a caricature of domination.

He is a reconciled human being.

---

10. The Female as Receptive and Relational

Within the symbolic vocabulary of this work, the feminine represents qualities of receptivity, relationality, generativity, tenderness, and openness.

Again, these are symbolic principles, not biological laws.

Not every woman embodies every feminine characteristic.

Not every man lacks them.

The purpose of symbolism is to describe dimensions of the human person that can appear in either sex.

The feminine therefore cannot be reduced to weakness.

Receptivity can be strength.

Compassion can require extraordinary courage.

Relational awareness can exceed brute force.

The capacity to receive, nurture, and preserve life is not spiritual inferiority.

The problem occurs only when the present social order turns symbolic differences into absolute judgments of human worth.

---

11. The Hidden Feminine in the Male

If the spiritual human is more than the body, then the male must discover dimensions within himself that are not traditionally associated with masculinity.

He must learn tenderness.

He must learn receptivity.

He must learn compassion.

He must learn humility.

He must learn to receive rather than merely command.

He must learn to nurture rather than merely conquer.

These qualities do not make the male less complete.

They make him more complete.

The masculine becomes integrated when it ceases to reject the feminine.

This provides one foundation for the later doctrine of spiritual androgyny.

The true male is not a male stripped of everything feminine.

He is a male whose masculine and feminine dimensions have been reconciled within the Spirit.

---

12. The Hidden Masculine in the Female

The same principle applies in reverse.

The woman may discover within herself qualities traditionally associated with masculinity:

strength,

courage,

leadership,

discipline,

decisiveness,

and independence.

These qualities do not make her spiritually defective.

They reveal that the human spirit cannot be perfectly mapped onto biological sex.

The female body does not imprison the spirit within one narrow psychological category.

The deeper human being contains a capacity for both masculine and feminine modes of expression.

This is precisely why Thomas's language of **making the two one** becomes so significant.

The two are not simply two biological bodies.

They can also represent the divided dimensions of the human being.

---

13. The Meaning of “Becoming Male”

Thomas 114 introduces the extraordinary image of Mary being “made male.”

Taken literally, the statement would create an obvious biological problem.

Taken mystically, it becomes a statement about transformation.

Mary's body does not need to become biologically male for her to become a **living spirit**.

The language instead suggests that the feminine condition, as represented within the text, must pass beyond itself into a higher spiritual identity.

The “male” therefore becomes a symbol of spiritual completion.

Yet Thomas 22 complicates this interpretation.

The goal is not simply:

female → male.

The deeper goal is:

male + female → one.

The transformation is therefore ultimately toward unity.

---

14. The Feminine Does Not Remain Trapped in the Flesh

The female body belongs to the same temporary order as the male body.

It is born.

It changes.

It ages.

It dies.

The woman therefore possesses the same spiritual destiny as the man: liberation from the limitations of the present age.

The spiritual woman cannot be reduced to reproductive function, sexual attractiveness, domestic role, or social status.

She possesses a spiritual identity that exceeds every earthly category.

This is why Mary becomes so important within the symbolic structure.

She represents the person who must move from **fleshly identification toward spiritual identity**.

Her transformation is not the destruction of womanhood.

It is the discovery of a deeper identity that womanhood alone cannot exhaust.

---

15. Submission and Transformation

The concept of submission must therefore be treated carefully.

The Pastoral and Pauline traditions establish forms of earthly submission within marriage and household life.

But submission cannot automatically be equated with spiritual inferiority.

A person may occupy a subordinate social role while remaining spiritually equal before God.

Within the mystical framework developed here, submission can also become a spiritual metaphor for surrendering the isolated ego.

The ego says:

I will determine everything myself.

Spiritual surrender says:

I will no longer make myself the absolute center.

The distinction is crucial.

Submission to another human being can become abusive if separated from love, justice, responsibility, and free moral agency.

Spiritual surrender, however, concerns the transformation of the self-centered will.

The two should not be confused.

---

16. The Male Who Liberates

The ideal male therefore cannot simply be the male who commands.

He must be the male who **serves the restoration of the other**.

His authority must become protective rather than predatory.

His strength must become liberating rather than oppressive.

His leadership must lead toward life rather than dependence upon himself.

In this sense, the mature male can become a guide through whom the feminine discovers its spiritual freedom.

But the guide does not become the destination.

Christ is the destination.

God is the destination.

The Kingdom is the destination.

The male who claims to possess another person's spirit has already misunderstood spiritual authority.

True spiritual authority points beyond itself.

---

17. The Female Who Awakens

The female likewise must not understand herself merely through submission to earthly authority.

Her spiritual journey is ultimately toward God.

Her submission within a relationship, where freely and rightly ordered, cannot replace her direct spiritual responsibility.

She must awaken.

She must discern.

She must seek truth.

She must become spiritually alive.

The woman does not cease to be responsible before God simply because she occupies a subordinate social position.

The spiritual person is always ultimately accountable to the divine.

Thus the relationship between male and female can become a school of spiritual transformation without becoming an excuse for domination.

---

18. The Limitations of the Present Age

Why does the distinction between male and female become so heavily charged?

Because the present age transforms bodily distinctions into identities, desires, competitions, and hierarchies.

Beauty becomes currency.

Sex becomes power.

Gender becomes social status.

Desire becomes consumption.

Authority becomes domination.

The body becomes an object.

The person becomes a possession.

The spiritual tradition calls the human being away from this reduction.

The body is real.

But the body is not sovereign.

Desire is real.

But desire is not sovereign.

Social roles are real.

But they are not ultimate.

The present age assigns identities.

The Spirit reveals the deeper human.

---

19. Toward the Androgynous Human

The theology of the Androgynous Spirit therefore does not begin by erasing male and female.

It begins by **putting them in their proper place**.

Male and female belong to the embodied order.

They describe the form in which the human being presently exists.

But the Spirit is deeper than form.

The spiritual human can contain both masculine and feminine qualities.

The male can become compassionate without ceasing to be male.

The female can become strong without ceasing to be female.

The man can receive.

The woman can lead.

The man can nurture.

The woman can protect.

The man can become tender.

The woman can become authoritative.

These possibilities reveal that spiritual identity exceeds biological categories.

---

20. The Two Are Moving Toward One

The ultimate direction is therefore not domination.

It is reconciliation.

Not:

male conquers female.

Not:

female destroys male.

But:

male and female become one.

The division of the flesh becomes the occasion for discovering a deeper unity in Spirit.

This is the mystery expressed by Thomas:

> "When you make the two one…"

The two remain distinguishable within earthly existence, but their spiritual meaning is transformed through union.

The masculine and feminine become complementary dimensions of a greater whole.

The human being becomes internally reconciled.

The divided person becomes whole.

Conclusion — Beyond the Fleshly Division

Male and female are real.

The body is real.

Sexual desire is real.

Social relationships are real.

Hierarchy exists within the earthly order.

But none of these realities is ultimate.

The flesh belongs to the present age.

The Spirit reaches beyond it.

Therefore the human being must learn to distinguish **embodied identity from spiritual identity**.

The male body is not the whole male.

The female body is not the whole female.

The social role is not the whole person.

The sexual desire is not the whole person.

Beneath these distinctions is the living Spirit.

The male must become spiritually whole.

The female must become spiritually whole.

And spiritual wholeness requires the reconciliation of what the flesh presents as divided.

The journey therefore continues toward a deeper mystery:

What does it mean for the masculine and feminine to become one without destroying either?

That question leads directly to the next stage of the journey: **the spiritual human beyond the divisions of the flesh.**

Part I — The Two Natures

Chapter 3 — The Living Spirit

The deepest mystery of the human being begins when the person ceases to understand the body as the entirety of the self.

The body is visible.

The Spirit is invisible.

The body belongs to the world of change.

The Spirit reaches toward what does not perish.

The body is born into the world.

The Spirit awakens to the divine.

The Gospel of Thomas gives this mystery a particularly striking expression when Jesus speaks of becoming a **“living spirit.”** The phrase suggests that true spiritual existence is not merely biological life with religious beliefs added to it. It is a transformation of the human being at the deepest level.

The living spirit is the human being who has awakened to a reality greater than the body.

---

1. What Is the Living Spirit?

The phrase **living spirit** describes a mode of existence rather than simply a substance hidden somewhere inside the body.

A living spirit is one whose consciousness has become oriented toward the divine source of life.

Such a person still possesses a body.

Still eats.

Still sleeps.

Still experiences pain.

Still ages.

Still participates in ordinary human relationships.

But the person no longer understands these things as the final horizon of existence.

The body remains present, but it no longer possesses absolute authority over identity.

The person begins to recognize:

I inhabit this body, but I am more than this body.

This realization forms the foundation of spiritual awakening.

---

2. The Body Is Not the Final Identity

Human beings naturally identify themselves through bodily characteristics.

We say:

“I am a man.”

“I am a woman.”

“I am young.”

“I am old.”

“I am attractive.”

“I am strong.”

“I am weak.”

“I am healthy.”

“I am sick.”

These statements can describe genuine conditions.

But none of them completely describes the spiritual human.

The body changes throughout life.

A child becomes an adult.

The face changes.

Strength changes.

Hair changes.

Sexual capacity changes.

Eventually the body dies.

If identity were completely identical with the body, then identity would disappear with every bodily transformation.

The spiritual tradition proposes something deeper.

The person is not merely the collection of bodily conditions experienced throughout time.

There is a spiritual dimension that reaches beyond them.

---

3. Jesus and the Spirit

The Gospel of John presents Spirit as the source of life.

Jesus says:

> "It is the Spirit who gives life; the flesh is no help at all."

This statement establishes the basic hierarchy.

Biological existence is necessary for earthly life, but spiritual life comes from another source.

The body can sustain earthly existence.

The Spirit awakens the human being to divine existence.

This distinction explains why spiritual life cannot be reduced to physical survival.

A person may possess everything necessary for bodily comfort while remaining spiritually empty.

Conversely, a person may experience bodily suffering while possessing profound spiritual freedom.

The two dimensions therefore cannot be equated.

4. Birth of the Spirit

Jesus tells Nicodemus:

> "Unless one is born again he cannot see the kingdom of God."

Nicodemus initially understands the statement in bodily terms.

Jesus redirects the conversation toward Spirit.

The contrast is decisive:

physical birth belongs to the flesh.

spiritual birth belongs to the Spirit.

The human being therefore possesses the possibility of another birth—not another biological birth, but an awakening of consciousness to God.

The living spirit is born inwardly.

The body remains the same.

The person becomes different.

5. Awakening Rather Than Escape

The spiritual human does not necessarily need to flee the physical world in order to become spiritual.

The transformation occurs through perception.

The world that once appeared absolute becomes understood as temporary.

Desire that once appeared irresistible becomes observable.

Fear that once controlled the mind becomes something that can be confronted.

The body that once appeared to be the entire self becomes recognized as a temporary dwelling.

Spiritual awakening therefore changes the relationship between consciousness and embodiment.

The body remains.

But identification changes.

---

6. The Living Spirit and Knowledge

The spiritual traditions explored in this work place extraordinary importance upon knowledge.

But this knowledge is not merely accumulation of information.

A person can memorize thousands of theological propositions and remain spiritually asleep.

The knowledge of the living spirit is **transformative recognition**.

The person recognizes:

- the impermanence of bodily existence,
- the limitations of desire,
- the instability of worldly status,
- the reality of spiritual life,
- the presence of divine truth,
- and the insufficiency of the ego.

This kind of knowledge changes the person who possesses it.

The knower is transformed by what is known.

---

7. The Living Spirit and Light

John repeatedly connects spiritual life with light.

Jesus says:

> "I am the light of the world."

Paul similarly tells believers:

> "At one time you were darkness, but now you are light in the Lord."

The transition is therefore not merely from ignorance to information.

It is from **darkness to illumination**.

Darkness represents blindness, confusion, deception, and alienation.

Light represents perception, truth, divine presence, and awakening.

The living spirit is therefore illuminated.

It sees the world differently because it has begun to perceive reality through another principle.

---

8. The Spiritual Human and the Present Age

The living spirit remains embodied within the present age while refusing to regard the present age as ultimate.

This is why the New Testament repeatedly uses the language of pilgrimage and exile.

Peter describes believers as:

> “sojourners and exiles.”

Paul describes their citizenship as being in heaven.

The Christian therefore inhabits the world without believing that the world, in its present condition, is the final kingdom.

This creates a profound spiritual tension.

The person lives here.

But inwardly belongs elsewhere.

The body participates in the present age.

The Spirit anticipates another order.

---

9. The World of the Flesh

The fleshly world is characterized by competition, possession, fear, desire, mortality, and domination.

People seek to secure themselves through things that inevitably disappear.

They seek permanence through wealth.

Identity through status.

Security through power.

Meaning through pleasure.

Immortality through reputation.

But everything belonging to the present age remains subject to change.

The living spirit sees this.

It does not necessarily reject ordinary life.

Instead, it refuses to make temporary things into absolute things.

This is spiritual detachment.

---

10. The Living Spirit and Death

Death is the great test of bodily identity.

Everything the body possesses can be taken away.

Strength disappears.

Beauty disappears.

Possessions disappear.

Social status disappears.

Eventually the body itself disappears.

If the human being is nothing more than the body, then death appears as absolute annihilation.

The Christian and mystical traditions challenge this conclusion.

Paul speaks of a transformation beyond the present body.

Jesus speaks of eternal life.

The Gospel of Thomas repeatedly speaks of discovering life beyond ordinary identification with the world.

The living spirit therefore approaches death differently.

Death remains an enemy within the Christian framework, but it is no longer regarded as the final authority.

---

11. The Heavenly Dwelling

Paul writes of the earthly body as a tent and speaks of another dwelling.

The image of the tent is important.

A tent is useful precisely because it is temporary.

It provides shelter during a journey.

But nobody mistakes the tent for the final destination.

The body can therefore be understood as the dwelling of the pilgrim.

The spiritual human travels through embodied existence.

The body is the vessel of the journey.

The journey is toward God.

This does not make the body worthless.

It makes the body **finite**.

And recognizing finitude is one of the beginnings of wisdom.

---

12. Beyond Male and Female

The doctrine of the living spirit has profound consequences for the mystery of male and female.

If the body is temporary, then biological sex belongs to the temporary order.

The human being appears as male or female.

But the living spirit cannot be reduced to either designation.

This is why Paul's statement in Galatians becomes significant:

> “There is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”

The statement should not be interpreted as denying biological reality.

It points toward a deeper spiritual equality and unity.

The male and female distinctions remain within embodied existence.

But they do not constitute the ultimate identity of the person in Christ.

The living spirit transcends the hierarchy of fleshly identity.

---

13. The Androgynous Dimension

Here the concept of spiritual androgyny becomes intelligible.

The living spirit is not itself biologically male or female.

It can manifest masculine qualities.

It can manifest feminine qualities.

It can contain strength and tenderness.

Authority and receptivity.

Courage and compassion.

Discipline and gentleness.

Giving and receiving.

The spiritual human becomes integrated rather than divided.

This does not mean that every individual must display the same personality or abandon biological sex.

It means that the deepest spiritual identity is not confined to culturally assigned characteristics.

The human spirit is larger than the categories imposed upon the body.

---

14. Thomas and the Living Spirit

Thomas 114 gives this principle its most provocative expression.

Peter objects to Mary.

Jesus responds by describing a transformation in which she becomes “male” and thereby becomes a “living spirit.”

The crucial phrase is not merely **“male.”**

It is **“living spirit.”**

The transformation has a destination.

The destination is life.

The bodily distinction is being used symbolically to describe a movement toward spiritual completion.

Thomas 22 provides the balancing principle:

> “Make the two one.”

The deepest meaning therefore cannot simply be that women must become men.

The deeper movement is:

division → transformation → unity → living spirit.

---

15. The Feminine Within the Male

If the living spirit transcends bodily sex, then the male must also transcend a purely external understanding of masculinity.

The male contains dimensions that may be culturally described as feminine.

Compassion.

Receptivity.

Tenderness.

Intuition.

Nurture.

The discovery of these qualities does not destroy masculinity.

It deepens it.

The spiritually mature male becomes capable of containing what the fleshly hierarchy might have attempted to separate.

The masculine and feminine become reconciled internally.

The man becomes whole not by rejecting the feminine, but by integrating it.

---

16. The Masculine Within the Female

The same principle applies to the female.

The woman possesses qualities that can be described symbolically as masculine.

Strength.

Courage.

Leadership.

Discipline.

Assertiveness.

Protection.

These qualities do not make the woman spiritually defective.

They reveal the inadequacy of reducing spiritual identity to bodily sex.

The woman can therefore move toward spiritual completeness without ceasing to be embodied as a woman.

The living spirit transcends the simple opposition.

---

17. Submission and Spiritual Transformation

The New Testament's teachings concerning submission must also be understood within this framework.

Earthly relationships may contain ordered roles.

The wife may submit to the husband.

The husband may be commanded to love sacrificially.

But the spiritual identity of both remains rooted in God.

The woman does not become spiritually inferior merely because she occupies a subordinate earthly role.

Nor does the man become spiritually superior merely because he occupies a position of authority.

The hierarchy belongs to relationship.

The Spirit belongs to the deeper identity.

This distinction prevents earthly authority from becoming an absolute metaphysical claim.

---

18. The True Male

The true male, within this spiritual framework, is therefore not simply the biologically male individual.

He is the male who has become **spiritually integrated**.

His strength is tempered by compassion.

His authority is tempered by humility.

His sexuality is governed by discipline.

His leadership is oriented toward service.

His relationship to women is not predatory.

He does not use authority merely to satisfy the ego.

He becomes capable of bearing responsibility.

The mature male therefore becomes an image of integrated spiritual masculinity.

His masculinity becomes a vessel rather than a prison.

---

19. The True Female

Likewise, the true female is not defined merely by biological sex.

She is the woman whose spirit has awakened.

She can receive without becoming powerless.

She can submit without surrendering moral responsibility.

She can love without becoming possessed.

She can follow without becoming spiritually blind.

She can lead when called upon to lead.

She can become strong without abandoning tenderness.

The spiritually mature female is therefore not simply an obedient body.

She is a **living spirit**.

---

20. The One Beyond the Two

The final goal is neither male supremacy nor female supremacy.

It is unity.

Thomas speaks of making the two one.

Paul speaks of being one in Christ.

The spiritual human therefore moves beyond the struggle for superiority.

The question is no longer:

Which sex is greater?

The question becomes:

How can the divided human become whole?

The male and female dimensions are reconciled.

The flesh remains differentiated.

The Spirit becomes unified.

The person discovers that what appeared to be an absolute division belongs to a lower level of existence.

---

21. The Living Spirit and Liberation

The living spirit is therefore a liberated human being.

Liberation does not necessarily mean escaping the body physically.

It means escaping the false belief that the body and present world possess absolute authority.

The person becomes free from enslavement to desire.

Free from obsession with status.

Free from identification with appearance.

Free from domination by fear.

Free from the demand to define the self exclusively through sex.

Free from the illusion that temporary things can provide permanent security.

This is spiritual freedom.

---

22. The Kingdom

The living spirit is oriented toward the Kingdom.

The Kingdom is not simply another geographical location.

It represents the divine order toward which the human being is moving.

Christ becomes the center.

Truth becomes the guide.

Love becomes the law.

Spirit becomes the source of life.

The present age becomes understood as temporary.

The human being becomes a pilgrim.

The destination is union with God.

Conclusion — Becoming a Living Spirit

The human being begins as embodied flesh.

The body is male or female.

It experiences desire.

It participates in relationships.

It enters earthly hierarchies.

It suffers.

It ages.

It dies.

But the human being is capable of awakening to another reality.

The Spirit gives life.

The Spirit illuminates.

The Spirit transcends the temporary divisions of the flesh.

The Spirit reveals that the human being is more than bodily identity.

The male discovers the feminine dimension within spiritual wholeness.

The female discovers the masculine dimension within spiritual wholeness.

The two move toward unity.

The divided human becomes whole.

The final goal is not the destruction of the body, nor the denial of biological sex.

It is the discovery that **neither body nor sex is the final measure of the human being**.

The final measure is Spirit.

And the Spirit, when awakened, becomes what Thomas calls a **living spirit**.

The journey has therefore moved from:

body → flesh → conflict → awakening → Spirit → integration → unity.

The next question follows naturally:

If the living spirit transcends ordinary identification with the body, what is the deeper human identity hidden beneath the distinction between male and female?

Part I — The Two Natures

Chapter 4 — The Hidden Androgynous Human

The human being appears divided.

Male and female.

Body and spirit.

Above and below.

Inside and outside.

Visible and invisible.

The spiritual traditions considered in this work repeatedly return to the possibility that these apparent divisions do not describe the deepest level of reality. What appears divided externally may possess an underlying unity.

This is the mystery of the **hidden androgynous human**.

The term *androgynous* is being used here in a spiritual and symbolic sense. It does not deny biological sex. It does not claim that male and female bodies are identical. It does not require the elimination of sexual distinction.

Instead, it proposes that the deepest spiritual identity of the human being contains dimensions symbolically associated with both **masculine and feminine principles**.

The body presents one form.

The Spirit contains a greater fullness.

---

1. The Human Being Beneath the Body

The body is the first identity a person encounters.

A person is born into a sexed body.

Society assigns a name.

A family assigns relationships.

The world assigns expectations.

The individual gradually develops an understanding of the self through these external categories.

Yet beneath these layers remains a deeper question:

Who am I before all these descriptions?

The body can describe what a person looks like.

Social identity can describe how others understand the person.

Personality can describe characteristic patterns of behavior.

But none of these necessarily describes the deepest spiritual identity.

The hidden human is the person beneath the visible categories.

This is the human who can awaken to Spirit.

---

2. The Image of God

Genesis declares that humanity is created in the **image and likeness of God**.

The text then immediately speaks of male and female.

This juxtaposition has profound symbolic possibilities.

Humanity is created in God's image.

Humanity exists as male and female.

Therefore the image of God cannot be reduced to masculinity alone.

Nor can it be reduced to femininity alone.

The divine image transcends the biological distinction while being manifested through both sexes.

This allows a theological interpretation in which masculine and feminine are both capable of reflecting dimensions of the divine image.

The male does not possess the image of God more completely merely because he is male.

The female does not possess it less completely merely because she is female.

The image is deeper than sex.

---

3. The Divine Image and the Two

The biblical text can therefore be read as establishing a profound relationship:

God → image → humanity → male and female

The distinction appears within the human manifestation of the divine image.

This suggests that the two sexes are not necessarily two unrelated spiritual categories.

They are two embodied expressions of humanity.

The spiritual mystery emerges when the two are understood as complementary manifestations of a deeper human reality.

The human being is divided in appearance.

The human reality is unified in origin.

This provides an important foundation for spiritual androgyny.

---

4. Androgyny Does Not Mean Biological Confusion

The word *androgynous* can easily be misunderstood.

In this work it does not mean that biological sex is unreal.

Male bodies remain male.

Female bodies remain female.

Reproductive differences remain meaningful.

The distinction belongs to the embodied order.

Androgyny instead concerns the **inner spiritual composition of the human person**.

A man may possess tenderness.

A woman may possess strength.

A man may be receptive.

A woman may be authoritative.

A man may nurture.

A woman may protect.

None of these qualities belongs exclusively to one sex.

The Spirit exceeds the boundaries of the body.

---

5. Masculine and Feminine as Principles

The terms masculine and feminine can therefore be used symbolically.

The **masculine principle** may represent:

- initiative,
- direction,
- stability,
- authority,
- protection,
- discipline,
- penetration into mystery,
- outward movement.

The **feminine principle** may represent:

- receptivity,
- nurture,
- compassion,
- relationality,
- generation,
- intuition,
- preservation,

- inward depth.

These descriptions are symbolic rather than absolute psychological laws.

Neither principle is complete by itself.

Initiative without receptivity becomes domination.

Receptivity without initiative can become passivity.

Authority without compassion becomes tyranny.

Compassion without strength can become helplessness.

Discipline without tenderness becomes rigidity.

Tenderness without discipline can become instability.

The whole human requires integration.

---

6. The Masculine Without the Feminine

A purely masculine spirituality would become incomplete.

The masculine separated from the feminine can become obsessed with conquest.

It seeks to dominate rather than understand.

It seeks to penetrate rather than receive.

It seeks to command rather than listen.

It seeks power rather than relationship.

Such masculinity becomes a distorted reflection of the spiritual principle it was intended to embody.

The true masculine must therefore discover the feminine within itself.

The man must become capable of receiving.

He must learn compassion.

He must learn humility.

He must become capable of nurturing what he has been entrusted to protect.

Only then does strength become wisdom.

---

7. The Feminine Without the Masculine

The feminine principle can likewise become distorted when separated from the masculine.

Receptivity without discernment can become indiscriminate acceptance.

Nurture without boundaries can become self-destruction.

Relationality without individuality can become dependency.

Compassion without strength can become inability to resist evil.

The feminine therefore also requires integration.

The woman must possess courage.

She must possess discernment.

She must possess strength.

She must possess the ability to establish boundaries and act decisively.

The goal is not to erase femininity.

It is to complete it.

---

8. The Hidden Human

The hidden human therefore contains both dimensions.

The visible body may be male.

The visible body may be female.

But the inner human contains a larger spiritual capacity.

The man can encounter the feminine within himself.

The woman can encounter the masculine within herself.

This does not mean that each becomes psychologically identical.

It means that each becomes capable of integrating qualities that the fleshly world often separates.

The result is interior wholeness.

The human being ceases to be internally divided according to rigid categories.

---

9. Thomas 22: Making the Two One

The Gospel of Thomas provides one of the strongest expressions of this mystery.

Jesus says:

> "When you make the two one…"

The saying then speaks of inside and outside, above and below, and male and female.

The structure is important.

The male and female are placed alongside a series of opposites.

The spiritual task is to reconcile them.

This suggests that salvation involves more than acquiring information about God.

It involves the **integration of opposites within the human being**.

The divided human becomes unified.

The scattered human becomes whole.

The fragmented consciousness becomes integrated.

---

10. Inside and Outside

Thomas speaks of making:

> "the inside like the outside and the outside like the inside."

The distinction between inner and outer is fundamental to human existence.

A person can present one identity externally while experiencing another internally.

Hypocrisy emerges when the two become radically divided.

Spiritual integrity requires reconciliation.

The hidden human must become aligned with the visible human.

This principle also applies to male and female.

The external body is one thing.

The inner spiritual reality is deeper.

The goal is not to deny the body.

It is to bring the body's life into harmony with the Spirit.

---

11. Above and Below

Thomas also speaks of making:

> “the above like the below.”

The spiritual and material dimensions are therefore brought into relationship.

The heavenly is reflected in the earthly.

The invisible becomes manifested through the visible.

The human becomes a meeting place between worlds.

This is important because the androgynous human is not simply someone who escapes embodiment.

The embodied person becomes a vessel through which spiritual unity can manifest.

The body becomes transparent to the Spirit.

---

12. Male and Female Become One

The climax is:

> "when you make the male and the female into a single one…"

This is the central mystery.

The two remain distinguishable at the level of embodiment.

But spiritually they become one.

This can be interpreted on several levels.

It can represent the reconciliation of man and woman.

It can represent the integration of masculine and feminine qualities within the individual.

It can represent the restoration of primordial human unity.

And it can represent the transcendence of dualistic identification itself.

The most complete interpretation may encompass all four.

---

13. Thomas 114 and the Transformation of Mary

Thomas 114 presents the same mystery through a more controversial image.

Peter says:

> "Let Mary go out from among us, because women are not worthy of life."

Jesus responds:

> "I shall lead her so as to make her male…"

The text then gives the purpose:

> "that she too may become a living spirit."

The important movement is:

female → male → living spirit.

But when this is read alongside Thomas 22, the final destination cannot simply be biological masculinity.

The ultimate movement is toward **spiritual unity**.

“Male” becomes a symbol of a spiritual condition that transcends the limitations attributed to the feminine condition of the flesh.

Mary's destination is not merely becoming male.

Her destination is becoming **living spirit**.

---

14. The Hidden Feminine in the Male

Thomas 22 provides a necessary balance.

If Mary represents the feminine moving toward spiritual completion through the symbolic language of becoming male, the male disciple must also undergo transformation.

He cannot simply remain identified with masculinity.

The spiritual male must discover the feminine within himself.

He must learn to receive.

He must learn to nurture.

He must learn compassion.

He must become capable of surrender.

Thus spiritual transformation moves in both directions.

The female discovers the masculine.

The male discovers the feminine.

The two become one.

---

15. The Hidden Masculine in the Female

Likewise, the woman cannot be understood merely as passive receptivity.

She must develop spiritual strength.

She must possess discernment.

She must seek knowledge.

She must act according to truth.

She must become capable of spiritual authority over herself.

Her transformation does not require contempt for her feminine embodiment.

Rather, the masculine principle becomes integrated within her.

She becomes whole.

The spiritual woman is therefore not simply “female perfected by becoming male.”

She is a human being whose spiritual identity has expanded beyond the limitations of either category.

---

16. Submission and the Mystery of Union

The New Testament's teachings concerning male authority and female submission introduce another dimension.

Within the earthly household order, the woman may be described as submitting to the man.

The husband is simultaneously commanded to love sacrificially.

This relationship can be interpreted symbolically.

The masculine becomes the principle of direction.

The feminine becomes the principle of receptivity.

But the goal of the relationship is not domination.

It is union.

The husband and wife become “one flesh.”

The earthly marriage therefore becomes an image of a deeper spiritual principle:

difference does not prevent unity.

The two can remain distinct while participating in one life.

---

17. The One Flesh and the One Spirit

The language of **one flesh** and **one Spirit** can be placed in parallel.

Marriage creates unity at the bodily and relational level.

Spiritual awakening creates unity at the level of Spirit.

The two forms of union should not be confused, but their symbolism can illuminate one another.

The body joins.

The Spirit unifies.

The marriage of male and female can therefore become an earthly image of a deeper spiritual reconciliation.

The ultimate union, however, is not merely sexual.

It is ontological and spiritual.

The human being becomes integrated.

---

18. The Androgynous Human and Christ

The center of Christian spiritual transformation is Christ.

The goal is not simply to become psychologically balanced.

It is to become transformed in relation to Christ.

Paul describes Christ as the new humanity.

In Christ, social and bodily distinctions cease to determine spiritual worth.

The human being is incorporated into a new identity.

This provides the Christian context for spiritual androgyny.

The androgynous human is not an autonomous divine being.

The human becomes whole through participation in the divine life.

Unity is received rather than manufactured by the ego.

---

19. The Image Restored

If humanity was created in the image of God, then spiritual transformation can be understood as restoration of that image.

The image becomes obscured by ignorance.

Desire fragments the person.

Fear divides consciousness.

Social hierarchy produces domination.

The individual becomes identified with temporary forms.

Spiritual awakening begins the restoration.

The image becomes visible again.

The human becomes integrated.

The masculine and feminine are reconciled.

The person becomes a clearer reflection of divine unity.

20. Beyond Masculine Supremacy

The doctrine of the hidden androgynous human prevents spiritual masculinity from becoming a justification for absolute male superiority.

If the deepest human contains both masculine and feminine principles, then the male cannot claim exclusive possession of spiritual authority simply because he possesses a male body.

Likewise, the female cannot be reduced to a lesser spiritual category.

The earthly hierarchy remains an earthly relationship.

The Spirit transcends the hierarchy.

The man and woman remain embodied as they are, but neither possesses an inferior spiritual essence.

This is the crucial distinction.

---

21. Beyond Feminine Supremacy

The same principle prevents the opposite error.

The discovery of feminine spiritual qualities does not require rejecting masculinity.

Strength does not have to become oppression.

Authority does not have to become tyranny.

Discipline does not have to become cruelty.

The masculine principle can be redeemed.

Likewise, femininity can be redeemed.

The spiritual goal is not to replace one hierarchy with another.

It is to transcend the obsession with hierarchy itself.

---

22. The Human as a Meeting Place

The hidden androgynous human becomes a meeting place.

Earth and heaven.

Body and Spirit.

Male and female.

Action and receptivity.

Strength and tenderness.

Authority and humility.

The human being becomes a living synthesis.

The person no longer needs to choose between qualities simply because the fleshly world has assigned them to different categories.

The Spirit reunites them.

This is spiritual integration.

---

23. The Restoration of the Two

The two are not destroyed.

They are restored.

This distinction is essential.

The goal is not:

male disappears.

Nor:

female disappears.

The goal is:

male and female cease to be ultimate divisions.

They become dimensions within a larger unity.

The same principle applies to every spiritual opposition.

The goal is not to erase difference.

It is to discover the unity underlying difference.

---

24. The Hidden Human Awakens

The hidden human is present before awakening.

The Spirit is already the deepest possibility of the person.

But ignorance prevents recognition.

The individual identifies exclusively with the visible.

The hidden becomes forgotten.

Spiritual teaching functions as remembrance.

The person begins to remember what lies beneath the surface.

The living spirit awakens.

The hidden human becomes visible through transformation.

25. The Androgynous Human and the Kingdom

The Kingdom is therefore the final horizon of integration.

The person enters not merely as male or female.

The person enters as a **living spirit**.

The distinctions of flesh no longer possess absolute authority.

The person is known according to Spirit.

This is why the language of resurrection becomes important.

Resurrection is not merely continuation of the present condition.

It is transformation.

Paul speaks of a transformed body.

Thomas speaks of a living spirit.

The spiritual human moves toward a state in which corruption and division no longer have the final word.

Conclusion — The Human Beneath the Human

The hidden androgynous human is the spiritual identity concealed beneath the visible divisions of embodied existence.

The body is male.

The body is female.

The Spirit is deeper.

The masculine and feminine principles are not enemies.

They are dimensions awaiting reconciliation.

The male discovers the feminine within himself.

The female discovers the masculine within herself.

The two become one.

The divided human becomes whole.

The external distinction remains within the flesh, while the deeper identity is restored within the Spirit.

Thus the mystery of the human being can be expressed as:

One humanity.
Two embodied forms.

Two symbolic principles.
One spiritual destiny.
One living Spirit.

The ancient saying therefore becomes the key to the entire mystery:

> **"Make the two one."**

And once the two have become one, the question of which half is superior begins to disappear.

What remains is the **whole human**—the hidden image restored, the divided self reconciled, and the living Spirit awakened within.

Part II — The Gospel of Thomas

Chapter 5 — "Make the Two One"

The Gospel of Thomas contains one of the most concentrated expressions of mystical unity in early Christian literature. In Saying 22, Jesus speaks to his disciples about entering the Kingdom by overcoming a series of apparent oppositions:

> "When you make the two one…"

The saying continues by bringing together inside and outside, above and below, male and female, and other pairs of distinctions. The passage presents spiritual transformation as a movement from **division toward unity**.

For the theology developed in this book, Saying 22 is foundational.

It provides the clearest textual basis for understanding the **androgynous human** not as the destruction of biological sex, but as the reunification of what has become divided within embodied existence.

The male and female are two.

The Spirit makes them one.

---

1. The Saying

The relevant portion of Thomas 22 reads:

> "When you make the two one, and when you make the inside like the outside and the outside like the inside, and the above like the below, and when you make the male and the female into a single one…"

The saying then continues with further imagery concerning eyes, hands, feet, and the Kingdom.

The passage is remarkable because the male and female distinction is not presented in isolation.

It appears alongside a whole series of oppositions.

Inside and outside.

Above and below.

Male and female.

The implication is that the spiritual problem is fundamentally one of **division**.

Human consciousness experiences reality through distinctions.

The mystical movement reunifies what has been divided.

---

2. The Two

What are the “two”?

At the simplest level, the two can refer to male and female.

But the saying itself prevents such a narrow interpretation because it immediately introduces other pairs of opposites.

The two can therefore be understood as a general symbol of divided existence.

Human beings experience:

- inner and outer,
- heaven and earth,
- spirit and flesh,
- masculine and feminine,
- self and other,
- desire and discipline,
- knowledge and ignorance.

The spiritual task is not necessarily to erase every distinction.

Rather, it is to recognize the deeper unity that exists beneath them.

The two remain distinguishable.

Yet they are no longer experienced as ultimately separated.

---

3. Unity Does Not Mean Sameness

This distinction is essential.

To make two things one does not necessarily mean that they become identical.

Male does not become biologically indistinguishable from female.

Inside does not cease to be conceptually different from outside.

Above does not become literally identical with below.

The saying is therefore better understood as **reconciliation** rather than simple elimination of difference.

The two participate in one reality.

This is the meaning of spiritual unity.

Unity does not destroy distinction.

It transforms the relationship between distinctions.

---

4. Male and Female

The inclusion of male and female is particularly significant.

Humanity experiences itself through sexual differentiation.

The male body and female body are visibly distinct.

They possess different reproductive functions.

They often experience different social expectations.

They may experience sexuality and relationships differently.

Yet Thomas proposes that spiritual transformation can reach beneath this distinction.

The male and female are not ultimately two separate spiritual species.

They belong to one humanity.

And beyond humanity's bodily division lies Spirit.

---

5. The One Humanity

The first unity is therefore anthropological.

There is one human nature expressed through male and female.

The male is not a separate kind of humanity.

The female is not a separate kind of humanity.

Both participate in the same human reality.

This is consistent with the Genesis account of humanity being created in the divine image as male and female.

The distinction exists.

But the humanity is one.

Thomas takes this unity further into the mystical dimension.

The two are not merely biologically related.

They can become spiritually one.

---

6. The Inner Meaning of Male and Female

The saying can also be interpreted psychologically.

Every human being encounters qualities conventionally associated with masculinity and femininity.

Strength and tenderness.

Initiative and receptivity.

Authority and compassion.

Direction and nurture.

Giving and receiving.

The fleshly world often separates these qualities.

It tells men that certain qualities belong to them and women that other qualities belong to them.

The spiritual human discovers something deeper.

The qualities can coexist within one person.

The masculine does not have to reject tenderness.

The feminine does not have to reject strength.

The human being becomes internally integrated.

This is one meaning of **making the male and female one**.

---

7. The Masculine Principle

Within the symbolic framework developed in this book, masculinity represents qualities such as:

initiative, direction, stability, courage, discipline, protection, and authority.

These qualities can be spiritually beneficial.

But they can also become distorted.

Initiative can become aggression.

Authority can become domination.

Strength can become violence.

Discipline can become rigidity.

Protection can become possessiveness.

The masculine therefore requires the feminine dimension to become fully integrated.

Strength needs compassion.

Authority needs humility.

Direction needs receptivity.

---

8. The Feminine Principle

The feminine principle represents qualities such as:

receptivity, nurture, compassion, relationality, generation, preservation, and openness.

These qualities likewise have distorted forms.

Receptivity can become passivity.

Nurture can become self-neglect.

Relationality can become dependency.

Openness can become lack of discernment.

Compassion without boundaries can become destructive.

The feminine therefore also requires integration with the masculine.

Receptivity needs discernment.

Compassion needs strength.

Nurture needs boundaries.

Love sometimes requires decisive action.

---

9. The Complete Human

The complete human being therefore possesses access to both dimensions.

This does not mean that every person must express them in identical proportions.

It means that no human being is spiritually complete merely by exaggerating one side of the human spectrum.

The complete human is capable of both:

action and receptivity.

strength and tenderness.

authority and humility.

giving and receiving.

The two are brought together.

The divided person becomes integrated.

---

10. The Man and His Hidden Feminine

For the male, spiritual integration requires the discovery of the feminine within himself.

The male must learn that receptivity is not weakness.

He can listen.

He can receive.

He can nurture.

He can mourn.

He can show tenderness.

He can surrender his ego.

These qualities do not destroy masculinity.

They prevent masculinity from becoming an instrument of domination.

The spiritually mature male is therefore not merely powerful.

He is **whole**.

---

11. The Woman and Her Hidden Masculine

For the female, spiritual integration requires the discovery of the masculine within herself.

She can exercise courage.

She can establish boundaries.

She can lead.

She can act decisively.

She can protect.

She can discipline herself.

These qualities do not destroy femininity.

They prevent femininity from being reduced to helplessness or passivity.

The spiritually mature female is therefore not merely receptive.

She is **whole**.

---

12. Thomas and the Mystery of Mary

This interpretation becomes especially important when Thomas 22 is read alongside Thomas 114.

Saying 114 speaks of Mary being “made male.”

If read in isolation, the saying can appear to teach that the female must simply become male.

Saying 22 complicates that conclusion.

The goal is to **make the two one**.

Thus “male” can be understood as a symbol of spiritual completion rather than merely biological masculinity.

Mary's transformation is ultimately transformation into **living spirit**.

She does not merely exchange one bodily identity for another.

She moves beyond the limitations represented by the bodily distinction.

---

13. Why Male Is Used as the Symbol

The language remains unmistakably androcentric.

Thomas comes from a world in which masculinity was frequently associated with public authority, religious agency, maturity, and social independence.

The symbolic language therefore uses “male” as a representation of spiritual attainment.

This should be acknowledged rather than concealed.

The theology developed here does not need to pretend that the ancient text speaks in modern egalitarian language.

Instead, it asks:

What spiritual reality might the ancient symbol be pointing toward?

The answer proposed here is **integration**.

The “male” represents movement beyond passive identification with the bodily feminine condition as understood by the text.

The final destination, however, is the living spirit.

---

14. The Pauline Parallel

The Gospel of Thomas is not identical with Paul, but Paul's language provides an important parallel.

Galatians 3:28 states:

> "There is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus."

This is not Thomas 22.

Yet the conceptual relationship is striking.

Thomas:

male and female → one

Paul:

male and female → one in Christ

The two traditions use different theological frameworks, but both provide language for understanding salvation as transcending ordinary divisions.

---

15. The One in Christ

For Paul, the unity is found **in Christ**.

This is important.

The unity is not achieved merely through psychological self-integration.

It is received through participation in Christ.

The person enters a new identity.

Jew and Greek remain ethnically distinguishable.

Slave and free remain socially distinguishable.

Male and female remain bodily distinguishable.

Yet none of these distinctions determines the person's ultimate standing within Christ.

The spiritual identity is deeper.

---

16. Fleshly Hierarchy and Spiritual Unity

The distinction between earthly hierarchy and spiritual unity is essential.

The New Testament contains household instructions concerning male and female relationships.

It contains teachings about submission, authority, marriage, and family.

Yet these earthly relationships do not necessarily establish a hierarchy of spiritual worth.

A husband may possess responsibility within marriage without possessing a superior spirit.

A wife may submit within an earthly relationship without possessing an inferior spirit.

The social relationship and spiritual identity must therefore be distinguished.

Thomas 22 operates primarily at the deeper spiritual level.

---

17. One Flesh

The biblical tradition also contains another important unity:

“the two shall become one flesh.”

Marriage provides a concrete earthly image of two persons becoming one.

The male and female remain distinct individuals.

Yet they participate in one life.

This provides an important analogy for Thomas 22.

The goal of spiritual unity is not annihilation.

The two become one without ceasing to have existed as two.

Difference becomes communion.

Separation becomes relationship.

Division becomes unity.

---

18. From Marriage to Mysticism

The marriage image can therefore become mystical.

The male and female represent differentiated principles.

Their union represents reconciliation.

The visible marriage becomes a symbol of an invisible mystery.

Yet spiritual unity goes beyond sexuality.

The ultimate union is between humanity and God.

The soul is reunited with its divine source.

The fragmented self becomes whole.

The spiritual human becomes one.

Thus marriage becomes an image, not the final reality.

---

19. The Inside and Outside

Thomas places male and female beside another command:

> "make the inside like the outside and the outside like the inside."

This adds another dimension to the teaching.

The spiritual person must become integrated internally.

The hidden self and visible self must cease contradicting one another.

Hypocrisy is division.

Integrity is unity.

The person becomes transparent.

What the person is inwardly becomes increasingly consistent with what the person manifests outwardly.

This is another expression of making the two one.

---

20. The Above and Below

Thomas also speaks of:

> "the above like the below."

The spiritual world and earthly world are brought into correspondence.

The human being becomes the place where heaven and earth meet.

The Spirit does not simply abandon embodiment.

Instead, the spiritual reality becomes manifested through embodied existence.

The body becomes a vessel.

The world becomes a field of spiritual practice.

The visible becomes a symbol of the invisible.

---

21. The Human as Temple

This idea resembles the biblical conception of the human being as a temple of the Spirit.

The divine presence enters the embodied person.

The body becomes more than biological machinery.

It becomes sacred space.

This changes the meaning of embodiment.

The body is temporary.

But it can nevertheless become the place where spiritual reality is manifested.

The body does not need to be hated.

It needs to be **transformed in its relationship to Spirit**.

---

22. The Two Eyes

Thomas continues its symbolism with the eyes.

The image suggests a unification of perception.

Ordinary consciousness sees through opposites.

Good and evil.

Self and other.

Spirit and matter.

Male and female.

The mystical consciousness learns to perceive unity without denying difference.

The two eyes become one vision.

The divided mind becomes single.

The person begins to see reality as a whole.

---

23. The Two Hands

The same symbolism can be extended to the hands.

Two hands can perform one action.

They remain two.

Yet they cooperate as one.

This illustrates the mystery of unity.

Unity is not numerical simplicity.

It is harmonious participation.

Male and female can therefore remain distinct while becoming one in purpose, love, and spiritual reality.

The human being can possess different dimensions without being internally fragmented.

24. The Two Feet

Likewise, two feet carry one body.

One foot cannot perform the whole function alone.

Movement requires cooperation.

The symbol therefore points toward complementarity.

The masculine and feminine dimensions of humanity can likewise be understood as participating in a larger unity.

The goal is not competition.

It is coordinated movement toward the Kingdom.

25. Making the Two One Within the Individual

The deepest application of Thomas 22 may therefore occur within the individual person.

The human being contains contradictions.

Courage and fear.

Love and anger.

Strength and vulnerability.

Reason and emotion.

Activity and stillness.

Masculine and feminine.

Spiritual transformation requires integration.

The individual stops attempting to destroy half of the self.

Instead, conflicting dimensions are brought under a higher unity.

The Spirit becomes the center.

---

26. Making the Two One Between Persons

The teaching also operates relationally.

The man and woman encounter one another as differentiated beings.

They can compete.

They can dominate.

They can objectify one another.

Or they can become participants in a higher unity.

The relationship becomes a spiritual practice.

The male learns to encounter the feminine without possessing it.

The female learns to encounter the masculine without fearing it.

Each becomes capable of receiving the other without losing the self.

Union therefore becomes communion rather than consumption.

---

27. The End of Sexual Rivalry

If male and female become one spiritually, then rivalry between the sexes becomes meaningless at the deepest level.

The question:

Who is superior?

becomes spiritually misguided.

The male does not need to prove superiority over the female.

The female does not need to prove superiority over the male.

Both belong to the same humanity.

Both are capable of Spirit.

Both require transformation.

Both are moving toward the same Kingdom.

The spiritual goal therefore dissolves the obsession with superiority.

---

28. The End of Fragmentation

The ultimate enemy is not the existence of difference.

It is fragmentation.

The human being becomes fragmented when body and Spirit are separated.

When inner and outer contradict each other.

When masculine and feminine become hostile.

When desire becomes separated from love.

When authority becomes separated from responsibility.

When knowledge becomes separated from wisdom.

The mystical path reunifies these dimensions.

The person becomes whole.

---

29. The Androgynous Image

The androgynous human is therefore an image of restored wholeness.

The male contains the feminine.

The female contains the masculine.

The two encounter one another.

The divided dimensions become reconciled.

The human being becomes an integrated reflection of the divine image.

This is not a claim that every person has identical psychological characteristics.

It is a metaphysical claim about **spiritual fullness**.

No single embodied category contains the entirety of the human mystery.

30. The Kingdom and the One

Thomas connects this transformation with entering the Kingdom.

The Kingdom belongs to the person who has overcome fragmentation.

The person has become inwardly unified.

The two have become one.

The spiritual human is no longer controlled by the divisions of the flesh.

The person has awakened to another order.

The Kingdom is therefore not merely somewhere else.

It begins with transformation of perception.

The one who sees unity begins to live according to unity.

---

31. The Mystery of Unity

The teaching of Thomas 22 can therefore be summarized:

Two become one.

But this simple phrase contains multiple levels.

The body and Spirit become harmonized.

The inner and outer become aligned.

Heaven and earth become related.

Male and female become reconciled.

The fragmented person becomes whole.

The individual becomes unified in Christ and oriented toward God.

The final movement is from multiplicity toward unity without denying the reality of distinction.

---

32. The Living Spirit

Thomas 22 ultimately prepares the reader for Thomas 114.

The two become one.

Then the human becomes a **living spirit**.

This sequence provides a theological structure:

Division → reconciliation → unity → spiritual life.

Mary's transformation therefore belongs to the same mystical trajectory.

The feminine condition represented in Thomas 114 is not the final state.

The male condition itself is also not the final state.

The final state is **living Spirit**.

Conclusion — The Two Become One

Thomas 22 provides the foundation for the mystical anthropology developed throughout this book.

The human being begins divided.

Male and female.

Inside and outside.

Above and below.

Body and Spirit.

But the spiritual journey moves toward unity.

The two are not destroyed.

They are reconciled.

The male does not need to annihilate the feminine.

The female does not need to annihilate the masculine.

The two become one.

The masculine becomes compassionate.

The feminine becomes strong.

The male learns receptivity.

The female learns authority.

Both discover that these qualities belong to the larger human mystery.

And beneath both stands the Spirit.

The final mystery is therefore not:

“Which is greater, male or female?”

It is:

“What is the human being when male and female are no longer experienced as ultimate divisions?”

Thomas gives the answer through a single mystical command:

> **“Make the two one.”**

The result is not the disappearance of humanity.

It is its restoration.

The divided human becomes whole.

The fragmented human becomes integrated.

The embodied human becomes spiritually awake.

And the human who has become one begins to approach the mystery of the **living Spirit**.

Part II — The Gospel of Thomas

Chapter 6 — The Saying of Mary

Thomas 114: Peter's Rejection of Mary, Jesus' Response, and the Mystery of Becoming “Male”

Among the sayings attributed to Jesus in the Gospel of Thomas, none has generated more controversy than the final saying.

It begins with Peter rejecting Mary.

It ends with Jesus describing her transformation into “male” and identifying that transformation with becoming a **living spirit**.

The saying is short.

Its implications are enormous.

It raises questions concerning biological sex, spiritual identity, salvation, hierarchy, discipleship, and the meaning of the Kingdom.

Read superficially, Thomas 114 can appear to say that women are inherently inferior and that salvation requires becoming male.

Read alongside Thomas 22, however, a more complex mystical structure emerges.

The saying is not merely about biological sex.

It is about **transformation from an embodied identity toward a spiritual identity**.

---

1. The Saying

The saying is traditionally rendered:

> **Peter said to them, “Let Mary go out from among us, because women are not worthy of life.”**
>
> **Jesus said, “Look, I shall lead her so as to make her male, that she too may become a living spirit resembling you males. For every woman who makes herself male will enter the kingdom of heaven.”**

The passage is deliberately provocative.

Peter establishes a boundary.

Mary is excluded because she is a woman.

Jesus responds by promising transformation.

The woman will be “made male.”

The result is that she becomes a “living spirit.”

The saying therefore contains three stages:

exclusion → transformation → life.

The crucial question is what the transformation means.

---

2. Peter's Rejection

Peter's statement represents the most explicit exclusion of women in the Gospel of Thomas.

Mary is not rejected because of her character.

She is rejected because she is a woman.

Peter therefore treats biological sex as spiritually determinative.

His reasoning is essentially:

female → unworthy of life.

This represents an absolute identification of bodily sex with spiritual status.

The woman is defined entirely according to her embodiment.

There is no distinction between:

woman as body

and

woman as spirit.

Jesus' response introduces precisely that distinction.

---

3. Jesus Does Not Accept the Finality of Mary's Exclusion

Jesus does not simply agree with Peter.

Instead, he says that he will lead Mary toward transformation.

This is the first major theological point.

Peter sees Mary's femaleness as an absolute barrier.

Jesus presents it as something that can be **transformed**.

Whatever “becoming male” means, Mary is not abandoned.

She is not excluded permanently.

She is not declared incapable of spiritual life.

She is led toward the Kingdom.

Thus the saying ultimately overturns Peter's conclusion.

Peter says:

Women are not worthy of life.

Jesus says, in effect:

Mary will become a living spirit.

The final word is therefore not exclusion.

It is transformation.

---

4. Why “Male”?

The most difficult question is why Jesus uses the language of becoming male.

Several interpretations are possible.

The simplest is that the text reflects an ancient world in which masculinity represented social authority, maturity, independence, and spiritual agency.

Within that symbolic world, “male” could function as a metaphor for **full spiritual status**.

The text does not necessarily mean that Mary must undergo a literal biological transformation.

The destination of the transformation is explicitly spiritual:

> “that she too may become a living spirit.”

This phrase is crucial.

If “male” were purely biological, becoming male would itself be the final goal.

But the saying immediately gives another goal:

living spirit.

Therefore the biological category becomes symbolic of a spiritual transformation.

---

5. The Male as Spiritual Symbol

Within the theology developed in this book, “male” represents the active, awakened, authoritative, and spiritually integrated human.

The male is not spiritually superior simply because he possesses a male body.

Biological maleness and spiritual masculinity must be distinguished.

A male body can belong to someone dominated by lust, fear, ignorance, cruelty, and selfishness.

Such a person has not become spiritually “male” in the deeper sense.

Spiritual masculinity requires transformation.

It requires discipline.

Courage.

Wisdom.

Responsibility.

Self-control.

Love.

The symbolic “male” of Thomas 114 therefore represents more than anatomy.

It represents a state of spiritual development.

---

6. Mary Must Become More Than Her Body

Peter sees Mary as a woman.

Jesus sees Mary as a person capable of becoming a living spirit.

This difference is fundamental.

Peter's vision stops at the body.

Jesus' vision reaches toward Spirit.

Mary's body remains the starting point of the story.

But it does not have to remain the final definition of her identity.

The spiritual path begins when the person discovers:

I am more than the body through which I appear.

Mary therefore becomes an archetype of the human being whose spiritual destiny exceeds the limitations imposed upon bodily identity.

---

7. The Feminine Condition

The saying nevertheless contains an unmistakably negative conception of the feminine.

It does not present female embodiment as spiritually neutral.

The feminine condition is portrayed as something that must be overcome.

This should not be concealed.

The text reflects an ancient religious world in which male identity was frequently associated with greater spiritual and social agency.

The theological task is therefore not to pretend that Thomas 114 is egalitarian in modern terms.

It is to understand what the text is attempting to communicate through its symbolic language.

The question becomes:

What is being overcome?

The answer proposed here is not womanhood itself.

It is the **limitation of identity to the fleshly feminine condition**.

---

8. Becoming Male as Becoming Spiritually Complete

The statement can therefore be read:

female body → spiritual transformation → living spirit.

The term “male” represents the intermediate symbol.

The final reality is spiritual life.

This interpretation becomes much stronger when Thomas 114 is read with Thomas 22.

Thomas 22 says:

> “Make the two one.”

Thomas 114 says Mary must become “male.”

Taken alone, Thomas 114 can appear to establish male supremacy.

Taken alongside Thomas 22, the picture becomes more complicated.

The final goal is not simply:

female → male.

It is:

female → transformation → unity → living spirit.

---

9. The Mystery of the Two

Thomas 22 establishes that male and female must ultimately become one.

Therefore the spiritually complete male cannot simply be the opposite of the female.

He must contain the feminine dimension.

Likewise, the spiritually complete female must discover the masculine dimension.

The two become one within the living Spirit.

This gives a deeper meaning to Mary's transformation.

She does not merely cease being female.

She becomes capable of entering a spiritual identity in which the masculine and feminine are reconciled.

---

10. Mary as the Feminine Seeking the Masculine

Within the symbolic framework of this book, Mary represents the feminine embodied human moving toward the masculine principle.

The masculine principle represents:

direction, stability, authority, courage, discipline, and spiritual initiative.

Mary's transformation therefore represents the feminine principle receiving these qualities.

But this does not mean that she becomes a male body.

It means that the spiritual human cannot remain restricted to one symbolic pole.

The feminine must discover the masculine.

The masculine must discover the feminine.

The two become integrated.

---

11. The Male Must Also Transform

This point is essential.

If Mary must undergo transformation, the male disciples cannot simply assume that they are already spiritually complete.

Thomas 22 prevents such complacency.

The male must also become one with the feminine.

He must learn receptivity.

He must learn compassion.

He must learn tenderness.

He must learn humility.

He must learn to nurture.

The male who remains entirely identified with domination has not achieved the unity Thomas describes.

He remains divided.

---

12. The True Male

The true male, therefore, is not simply the biological male.

The true male is the **integrated human**.

He possesses masculine strength without becoming cruel.

He possesses authority without becoming tyrannical.

He possesses discipline without becoming rigid.

He possesses courage without becoming reckless.

And he possesses the feminine qualities of compassion, receptivity, tenderness, and nurture.

His masculinity is therefore transformed.

It becomes spiritually mature.

The male becomes more than the fleshly male.

He becomes a living spiritual human.

---

13. The True Female

The same principle applies to Mary.

The true female is not merely the woman defined by bodily sex.

She is the woman whose Spirit has awakened.

She possesses feminine qualities without becoming imprisoned by them.

She can be receptive without being helpless.

She can nurture without being consumed by others.

She can submit without surrendering her spiritual responsibility.

She can love without becoming possessed.

She can become strong without abandoning compassion.

She becomes spiritually integrated.

---

14. Submission and the Saying

The concept of submission enters this theology through the broader New Testament tradition.

The Pastoral Epistles describe women as submitting within the household order.

Ephesians likewise speaks of wives submitting to husbands.

Thomas 114 does not itself establish this doctrine.

The relationship must therefore be understood through the broader biblical framework rather than attributed directly to the saying.

Within that framework, the female's earthly submission can be interpreted as part of a relational order while her spiritual identity remains directed toward God.

The distinction is essential.

Earthly submission does not equal spiritual inferiority.

---

15. The Male's Responsibility

If the male occupies a position of authority, then the New Testament places corresponding responsibility upon him.

He is not permitted to use authority merely for self-gratification.

He is called to love sacrificially.

He is called to serve.

He is called to protect.

He is called to give himself for the good of the other.

Therefore the spiritual male cannot simply demand submission.

He must become worthy of trust.

Authority without love becomes domination.

Leadership without sacrifice becomes exploitation.

The true male must therefore become an instrument of life.

---

16. The Male Who Leads Toward Life

Peter's statement leads toward exclusion.

Jesus' response leads toward life.

This contrast is crucial.

Peter says:

female → unworthy of life.

Jesus says:

female → transformation → living spirit.

The spiritually mature male therefore follows the pattern represented by Jesus.

He does not lead the woman toward humiliation.

He leads toward life.

He does not make her dependent upon his ego.

He points beyond himself toward the Kingdom.

He does not treat her spirit as inferior.

He recognizes her capacity for transformation.

Thus spiritual authority becomes **life-giving authority**.

---

17. Mary and the Kingdom

The final promise is:

> "For every woman who makes herself male will enter the kingdom of heaven."

The Kingdom is the destination.

This is another reason "male" cannot simply mean biological sex.

If biological maleness were itself the requirement for salvation, then Mary would simply need to cease being biologically female.

But the text instead speaks of a woman **making herself male**.

The language is transformative.

It concerns becoming something spiritually different.

The woman moves beyond the limitations represented by her present identity.

She becomes capable of entering the Kingdom.

---

18. The Kingdom Beyond Fleshly Identity

The Kingdom therefore represents an order in which fleshly distinctions cease to have absolute authority.

This corresponds to the wider New Testament teaching that in Christ there is neither male nor female.

The biological distinction remains.

But it no longer determines the ultimate spiritual status of the person.

The Kingdom is therefore the place where the living spirit is recognized according to its true nature.

The person is no longer judged according to bodily hierarchy.

The Spirit becomes primary.

---

19. The Androgynous Reading

Thomas 114 can therefore become one of the central texts for the doctrine of the Androgynous Spirit.

The female contains a masculine spiritual potential.

The male contains a feminine spiritual potential.

Both are incomplete when identified exclusively with one pole.

The female becomes male symbolically.

The male discovers the feminine within himself.

The two become one.

The living Spirit emerges.

This is the deeper movement of the text.

---

20. The Danger of a Literal Reading

A literal biological reading creates a contradiction with the broader mystical framework.

If Mary must literally become biologically male, then Thomas 22's union of male and female becomes difficult to explain.

The more coherent mystical interpretation is that “male” represents a spiritual condition.

The body remains the outward vessel.

The Spirit undergoes transformation.

The person becomes spiritually complete.

Thus the language belongs to the symbolic vocabulary of mystical transformation.

---

21. The Feminine Is Not Destroyed

The feminine does not need to disappear.

It must be integrated.

Mary does not become less human by receiving the masculine principle.

She becomes more complete.

Likewise, the male does not become less masculine by receiving the feminine principle.

He becomes more complete.

The two dimensions are reunited.

This is the meaning of androgyny as used in this book.

---

22. Peter's Error

Peter's error is therefore not simply misogyny.

His deeper error is **reductionism**.

He reduces Mary to her body.

He sees:

woman

and therefore concludes:

unworthy of life.

Jesus sees:

human being capable of transformation.

The difference between Peter and Jesus is therefore a difference in spiritual perception.

Peter sees the external category.

Jesus sees the hidden potential.

This mirrors the entire theology of the living spirit.

The flesh sees the visible.

The Spirit sees the deeper reality.

---

23. Mary's Transformation as Revelation

Mary's transformation therefore reveals something about every human being.

Every person begins with an external identity.

Name.

Body.

Sex.

Family.

Nationality.

Social position.

Personality.

But spiritual awakening reveals that none of these is the final identity.

The person becomes a living spirit.

The transformation represented by Mary is therefore universal in principle.

The text uses female-to-male imagery, but the deeper process concerns the movement from **external identity toward spiritual identity**.

---

24. The Male Must Become More Than Male

Thomas 114 can therefore be read together with Thomas 22 as a warning to men as well.

The male who assumes that his biological sex guarantees spiritual superiority has misunderstood the teaching.

The fleshly male is still subject to desire, ignorance, death, and corruption.

He too must become spiritually alive.

He too must undergo transformation.

He too must make the two one.

He too must discover the feminine within himself.

The male therefore cannot remain complacent.

---

25. The Woman Must Become More Than Woman

Likewise, the woman must not understand spiritual transformation merely as becoming obedient to men.

Her ultimate destination is not male approval.

It is the Kingdom.

The male may have a relational role within earthly life, but he is not the source of the woman's spiritual life.

God is.

Christ is.

Spirit is.

The spiritually mature woman therefore follows earthly relationships while keeping her ultimate orientation toward the divine.

Her submission cannot become idolatry.

---

26. The Living Spirit Is the Goal

The entire saying culminates in one phrase:

living spirit.

This is the true destination.

Not masculinity.

Not femininity.

Not hierarchy.

Not submission.

Not bodily transformation.

Life.

The female must become spiritually alive.

The male must become spiritually alive.

The two must become one.

The human being must awaken.

This is the central mystery.

---

27. From Mary to Humanity

Mary's story therefore becomes an archetype.

Peter sees the woman.

Jesus sees the spirit.

Peter establishes exclusion.

Jesus establishes transformation.

Peter sees biological identity.

Jesus reveals spiritual possibility.

The contrast summarizes the entire spiritual anthropology of this book.

The flesh identifies.

The Spirit transforms.

---

28. The Final Unity

Thomas 114 must ultimately return to Thomas 22.

The final state is not:

male over female.

Nor:

female becoming inferior to male.

The deeper mystical state is:

male and female → one → living spirit.

The masculine and feminine are reconciled.

The body remains what it is.

The Spirit becomes what it can become.

The person moves beyond the limitations of the present age.

The Kingdom becomes possible.

Conclusion — Mary and the Living Spirit

Thomas 114 is one of the most difficult sayings in the Gospel of Thomas because its language is unmistakably shaped by an ancient patriarchal worldview.

Yet within that language lies a profound mystical proposition.

Peter believes Mary's bodily identity determines her spiritual worth.

Jesus rejects the finality of that judgment.

Mary can be transformed.

She can become “male.”

She can become a **living spirit**.

She can enter the Kingdom.

Read alongside Thomas 22, the movement becomes clearer:

male and female are divided in the flesh.

The Spirit reconciles the division.

The two become one.

The human becomes a living spirit.

Thus Mary's story becomes more than a statement about women.

It becomes a revelation about humanity.

The body is not the final identity.

Sex is not the final identity.

Social hierarchy is not the final identity.

The hidden Spirit is deeper.

And the ultimate goal is not that one sex should conquer the other.

It is that the divided human should become whole.

Mary therefore stands at the threshold of the mystery.

She enters the story as a woman.

She passes through transformation.

And she is promised life.

The saying's final movement is therefore not toward masculinity for its own sake.

It is toward **the Kingdom and the living Spirit**.

Part II — The Gospel of Thomas

Chapter 7 — What Does “Make Her Male” Mean?

Few phrases in the Gospel of Thomas are as provocative as Jesus' statement that he will “make” Mary male. The phrase is difficult precisely because it appears to take a biological distinction and use it to describe a spiritual transformation.

The question therefore becomes unavoidable:

What does it mean for a woman to be “made male”?

The answer developed in this book begins with a distinction:

biological sex is one thing; mystical identity is another.

The saying should not be reduced to a literal promise that Mary's physical body will become male. Its concluding purpose is that she may become a **“living spirit.”** The movement is therefore from bodily identity toward spiritual identity.

“Male” is the symbol through which Thomas describes that movement.

---

1. The Literal Reading

At the most literal level, the saying appears straightforward.

Mary is female.

Jesus will make her male.

She will therefore become worthy of life and enter the Kingdom.

But this interpretation immediately encounters difficulties.

If biological maleness itself were the requirement for salvation, then salvation would depend upon possessing a particular physical sex. Such a doctrine would contradict the broader Christian affirmation that both men and women can belong to Christ and receive the Spirit.

It would also make the mystical language of Thomas 22 difficult to explain.

Thomas 22 does not say:

female must become male.

It says:

> "Make the two one."

The two sayings must therefore be interpreted together.

---

2. The Symbolic Reading

The more coherent mystical interpretation understands “male” symbolically.

The ancient world frequently associated masculinity with qualities such as:

- maturity,
- authority,
- independence,
- rationality,
- strength,
- initiative,
- social agency,
- and spiritual leadership.

These associations are historically conditioned. They should not be treated as universal biological truths.

Within Thomas, however, such symbolism provides the vocabulary for describing Mary's transformation.

She moves from the condition represented by “female” into the condition represented by “male.”

The important point is that the transformation does not end there.

It culminates in becoming a **living spirit**.

---

3. Male as a Symbol of Spiritual Agency

Peter's rejection of Mary treats her as incapable of possessing the spiritual status associated with the male disciples.

Jesus' response reverses that judgment.

Mary will become capable of possessing the spiritual agency represented by the male.

She will no longer be excluded.

She will become a disciple.

She will become spiritually alive.

She will enter the Kingdom.

Thus “male” can be interpreted as a symbol of **spiritual agency**.

Mary is not being told that her physical body is defective.

She is being transformed from a socially and symbolically subordinate category into a state represented as spiritually authoritative.

---

4. The Problem of Ancient Symbolism

Modern readers often encounter this language with understandable discomfort.

Why should masculinity represent spiritual completion?

Why should femininity represent something requiring transformation?

The answer is partly historical.

Thomas emerged from an ancient Mediterranean world in which male authority was deeply embedded in social and religious structures.

The text therefore uses the symbolic language available to its author and audience.

Understanding that historical context does not require accepting every ancient assumption as universally true.

It allows us to distinguish:

the ancient symbol

from

the spiritual reality represented by the symbol.

---

5. Symbol and Reality

The symbol is “male.”

The reality toward which the symbol points is **spiritual fullness**.

This distinction is essential.

If the symbol is mistaken for the reality, the teaching becomes:

> Biological men are spiritually superior.

But if the symbol is understood as symbolic, the teaching becomes:

> The human being must transcend the limitations imposed by bodily and social identity and become spiritually whole.

The second interpretation fits the broader mystical structure of Thomas far better.

---

6. Thomas 22 as the Key

Thomas 22 provides the interpretive key.

Jesus says:

> “When you make the two one…”

The saying then identifies the male and female among the pairs that must become one.

Therefore the spiritual goal cannot simply be the destruction of the feminine in favor of the masculine.

The goal is **unity**.

Mary's transformation into “male” is therefore one stage in a larger process.

The movement is:

female → male → one → living spirit.

The ultimate identity is not “male.”

It is **one**.

---

7. Why Mary Begins With the Feminine

Mary's story begins from the category that Peter regards as spiritually inferior.

This is important rhetorically.

Jesus takes the person whom Peter believes cannot attain life and demonstrates that she can be transformed.

The saying therefore turns Peter's exclusion into an opportunity for revelation.

Peter says:

She cannot enter.

Jesus responds:

She can be transformed.

The woman whom Peter considers spiritually incapable becomes the very person through whom the possibility of spiritual transformation is demonstrated.

---

8. Becoming Male as Awakening

Within the framework of this book, “becoming male” therefore represents **awakening**.

The feminine condition, as symbolically understood by Thomas, represents receptivity without sufficient spiritual agency.

The masculine represents awakened agency.

Mary receives the masculine principle.

She becomes capable of acting.

Knowing.

Discernment.

Choosing.

Following.

Entering.

The spiritual woman therefore becomes more than a passive recipient of religious instruction.

She becomes an active participant in the Kingdom.

---

9. The Masculine Principle

The masculine principle can therefore be defined symbolically as:

direction + discernment + action + discipline + responsibility.

These qualities are not biologically exclusive to men.

They are human capacities.

But ancient Thomas uses male symbolism to represent them.

The spiritual task is to integrate them with the feminine principle.

Masculinity without compassion becomes domination.

Masculinity without receptivity becomes rigidity.

Masculinity without humility becomes pride.

Therefore the masculine itself requires transformation.

---

10. The Feminine Principle

The feminine principle can symbolically represent:

receptivity + nurture + compassion + relationality + generativity + openness.

Again, these qualities are not biologically exclusive to women.

They describe dimensions of human existence.

The problem arises when receptivity becomes absolute passivity.

When nurture becomes self-erasure.

When openness becomes lack of discernment.

When relationality becomes dependency.

The masculine principle provides direction and boundaries.

The feminine provides receptivity and relational depth.

The complete human integrates both.

---

11. The True Meaning of Androgyny

This is why the term **androgynous** is appropriate within this theological system.

The spiritually complete human contains both masculine and feminine dimensions.

The man does not become less male because he possesses feminine qualities.

The woman does not become less female because she possesses masculine qualities.

Instead, each becomes more spiritually complete.

Androgyny therefore means:

integration without biological confusion.

The body remains sexed.

The Spirit becomes integrated.

---

12. The Male Must Also Become “Female”

Thomas 114 speaks explicitly about Mary becoming male.

But Thomas 22 requires the male to undergo an equivalent transformation.

If the two must become one, then the male cannot remain exclusively masculine.

He must discover the feminine within himself.

He must learn:

receptivity,

compassion,

tenderness,

nurture,

humility,

and surrender.

The male who refuses these qualities remains internally divided.

He possesses only one side of the human mystery.

---

13. The Female Must Become “Male”

Likewise, Mary must discover:

strength,

courage,

discernment,

initiative,

discipline,

and authority.

This is what the symbol of “male” communicates.

She does not need to become biologically male.

She must become spiritually capable of what the ancient symbol associates with masculinity.

Thus the transformation is psychological, ethical, and mystical.

---

14. The Body Remains

Nothing in the symbolic interpretation requires the destruction of the body.

Mary remains embodied.

The male disciple remains embodied.

The woman remains a woman.

The man remains a man.

What changes is the **meaning assigned to the body**.

The body is no longer regarded as the complete identity of the person.

The Spirit becomes primary.

The body becomes the vessel through which the Spirit acts.

---

15. Flesh and Spirit

This interpretation also connects Thomas with the broader New Testament distinction between flesh and Spirit.

Paul repeatedly distinguishes:

living according to the flesh

from

living according to the Spirit.

The problem is not the existence of the body.

The problem is domination by the fleshly orientation.

Thomas 114 can therefore be interpreted within the same general spiritual movement.

Mary begins from an identity determined by fleshly categories.

She moves toward a spiritual identity.

She becomes a living spirit.

---

16. The Body Is Not the Enemy

This distinction prevents an extreme interpretation.

The body is not necessarily evil.

The female body is not evil.

The male body is not evil.

Sexuality is not inherently identical with sin.

The problem is **attachment and identification**.

When the body becomes the absolute measure of the self, the spiritual identity is obscured.

When the body becomes subordinate to the Spirit, embodiment can become a vehicle for spiritual life.

---

17. The Mystery of Desire

Sexual desire complicates the distinction between male and female.

The body experiences attraction.

The mind forms attachments.

The person seeks union.

This can produce love and family.

It can also produce lust, possessiveness, jealousy, and domination.

The spiritual human therefore does not simply suppress desire.

The person learns to transform desire.

The desire to possess becomes the desire to commune.

The desire to consume becomes the desire to love.

The desire for domination becomes the desire to serve.

This transformation is another expression of becoming spiritually “male” in the symbolic sense: desire becomes governed by conscious purpose.

---

18. Submission and the Masculine

The New Testament household tradition introduces another dimension.

Women are instructed to submit within marriage.

Men are given corresponding obligations of love and sacrificial responsibility.

Within the theological system developed here, this establishes an earthly relational hierarchy.

But the hierarchy must not be mistaken for metaphysical superiority.

The male's authority is legitimate only when ordered toward responsibility and love.

The woman's submission is not a declaration that her spirit is inferior.

The two remain spiritually capable of the same Kingdom.

---

19. The Male as Guide

The masculine principle therefore has a guiding function.

The spiritually mature male can become a guide.

But guidance must lead toward God rather than toward the guide's own ego.

The male does not become the woman's ultimate source of spiritual life.

God is the source.

Christ is the center.

Spirit is the life.

The male's role is therefore instrumental.

He can assist transformation.

He cannot replace the divine.

This distinction protects spiritual authority from becoming idolatry.

---

20. Mary as the Receptive Spirit

Mary's feminine position also possesses a positive dimension.

She is receptive.

She receives the teaching.

She receives transformation.

She allows the Spirit to work.

Receptivity is not itself weakness.

Indeed, spiritual life requires receptivity.

The human being must become capable of receiving truth.

The problem is not receptivity.

The problem is receptivity without discernment or transformation.

Mary's movement toward the masculine symbol therefore represents the integration of receptivity with active spiritual agency.

---

21. The Two Become One Within Mary

Mary ultimately becomes a symbol of internal reconciliation.

The feminine receives the masculine.

The receptive becomes active.

The hidden becomes manifest.

The divided becomes one.

She becomes a living spirit.

Thus the story is not merely about a woman becoming like a man.

It is about a divided human becoming integrated.

Mary becomes an archetype of the human being who discovers that spiritual identity exceeds bodily identity.

---

22. The Two Become One Within the Male

The male disciples undergo the opposite movement.

They already possess the social status represented by masculinity.

But that is insufficient.

They must become compassionate.

They must become receptive.

They must learn humility.

They must become servants.

Their masculinity must be transformed by the feminine principle.

Otherwise they remain spiritually incomplete.

The saying therefore cannot legitimately be used to establish the proposition:

male automatically equals spiritually perfected.

The entire mystical framework contradicts that conclusion.

---

23. Spiritual Masculinity Is Acquired

This leads to an important distinction:

biological maleness is received at birth.

spiritual masculinity is cultivated through transformation.

A man may possess a male body without possessing spiritual maturity.

Likewise, a woman may cultivate the qualities symbolically associated with masculinity.

Therefore the word “male” in Thomas 114 cannot be reduced to anatomy.

It describes an achieved spiritual condition.

---

24. The Living Spirit Is Beyond Both

Ultimately, however, even spiritual masculinity is surpassed.

The saying does not end:

> “She became male.”

It continues:

> “that she too may become a living spirit.”

This is the decisive point.

The masculine symbol is a vehicle.

The living Spirit is the destination.

The human being ultimately moves beyond the binary symbolism itself.

The male and female become integrated.

The Spirit becomes primary.

---

25. The Kingdom

The final phrase connects the transformation with the Kingdom.

Mary enters the Kingdom not because she has acquired a particular biological body, but because she has undergone a spiritual transformation.

The Kingdom belongs to the awakened.

The living spirit belongs to the Kingdom.

This connects Thomas 114 with the larger mystical theme of awakening.

The Kingdom is not merely a reward given to a particular sex.

It is the destination of spiritual transformation.

---

26. From “Male” to “Living Spirit”

The progression can now be expressed in four stages:

1. Female

The embodied and socially restricted condition.

2. Male

The symbolic acquisition of spiritual agency and completeness.

3. One

The reconciliation of masculine and feminine.

4. Living Spirit

The final spiritual identity beyond the division.

This sequence forms one of the central structures of the Androgynous Spirit theology.

---

27. The Deeper Christian Context

This interpretation also has parallels with Paul's declaration:

> “There is neither male nor female, for you are all one in Christ Jesus.”

Paul does not use the language of becoming male.

Thomas does.

But both traditions contain a movement beyond the ultimate spiritual significance of biological sex.

The Christian spiritual identity is located **in Christ**.

The Thomasine identity is located in becoming **one** and becoming **living spirit**.

Both challenge the idea that biological sex determines ultimate spiritual worth.

---

28. The Difference Between Thomas and Paul

The parallels should not erase the differences.

Thomas 114 uses explicitly androcentric symbolism.

Paul's Galatians passage emphasizes unity in Christ.

Thomas presents mystical transformation through symbolic opposites.

Paul presents incorporation into Christ.

The two traditions should therefore be compared rather than collapsed into one.

The Androgynous Spirit theology is a synthesis.

It draws upon their shared themes while acknowledging their differences.

---

29. The Mystery of Transformation

“Make her male” therefore becomes a statement about transformation.

The person begins in one condition.

The person encounters spiritual knowledge.

The old identity becomes insufficient.

The person receives another identity.

The divisions of the flesh lose their absolute power.

The Spirit becomes primary.

The person becomes alive.

The phrase can therefore be paraphrased mystically:

“Lead her beyond the limitations of her present embodied identity so that she may awaken to her complete spiritual nature.”

This preserves the symbolic force of Thomas without reducing it to literal biological transformation.

---

30. The Hidden Human

Mary's story reveals the hidden human beneath the visible human.

The visible person is categorized.

The hidden person is spiritual.

The visible person is male or female.

The hidden person possesses both masculine and feminine dimensions.

The visible person inhabits the present age.

The hidden person belongs to the Kingdom.

The visible person is mortal.

The hidden person seeks life.

The visible person is divided.

The hidden person seeks unity.

---

31. The Mystery of Spiritual Sex

The language of spiritual sex must therefore be handled carefully.

The Spirit is not biologically male or female.

When mystical texts use masculine or feminine language, they often use symbolism to communicate qualities that transcend anatomy.

The spiritual human may therefore be described as masculine, feminine, or androgynous depending upon the symbolic framework.

But the deepest reality exceeds all three.

The Spirit is living.

The Spirit is awakened.

The Spirit is united.

---

32. Beyond the Symbol

Every symbol eventually has to be transcended.

“Male” is a symbol.

“Female” is a symbol.

“Above” is a symbol.

“Below” is a symbol.

“Inside” is a symbol.

“Outside” is a symbol.

Thomas 22 teaches the reader to move beyond the opposition itself.

The purpose of the symbol is not to become trapped within it.

The purpose is to discover the reality toward which it points.

Thus the spiritual seeker must eventually move beyond even the language of androgyny.

The ultimate reality is **unity in Spirit**.

---

33. The Transformation of the Male and Female

The complete transformation can therefore be represented as:

Male → integrated male → whole human → living spirit.

And:

Female → spiritually empowered female → whole human → living spirit.

The paths begin differently because embodied identities differ.

But they converge.

The final destination is the same.

---

34. The Meaning of “Worthiness of Life”

Peter declares that women are not worthy of life.

Jesus' answer effectively overturns this.

Mary is capable of becoming a living spirit.

Therefore the ultimate worth of the person cannot be determined by biological sex.

This is one of the most significant implications of the saying.

Even within its androcentric symbolism, Mary is not permanently excluded.

She is promised transformation.

She is promised life.

She is promised the Kingdom.

---

35. The Final Meaning

“Make her male” therefore means, in the interpretation developed here:

Lead the embodied female beyond an identity confined to the limitations of the flesh, awaken within her the masculine principle of spiritual agency and maturity, reconcile that principle with the feminine, and bring her into the unified state of the living Spirit.

The phrase describes a journey.

It is not merely a biological command.

It is not merely a social instruction.

It is a mystical symbol of transformation.

Conclusion — Beyond “Male”

Thomas 114 begins with a woman whom Peter believes is unworthy of life.

Jesus does not leave her there.

He transforms her.

He uses the language of "male" to describe the transformation.

But the destination is greater than masculinity.

The destination is **living Spirit**.

Thomas 22 then provides the larger key:

> **"Make the two one."**

The male and female are reconciled.

The masculine and feminine are integrated.

The body remains embodied.

The Spirit becomes awakened.

The human being becomes whole.

Therefore the mystery of "making her male" is ultimately not the elevation of biological masculinity over biological femininity.

It is the revelation that **the deepest human identity cannot be confined to either bodily category**.

Mary's transformation represents the passage:

from flesh to Spirit,
from exclusion to participation,
from division to unity,
from bodily identity to spiritual identity,
and from death toward life.

The “male” is the symbol.

The **living Spirit** is the reality.

Part II — The Gospel of Thomas

Chapter 8 — The Living Spirit

The phrase **“living spirit”** stands at the center of the final saying of the Gospel of Thomas. Jesus does not merely promise Mary a change in social status or bodily appearance. He describes a transformation whose destination is spiritual life:

> “I shall lead her so as to make her male, that she too may become a living spirit…”

The statement therefore requires us to look beyond the word **“male”** toward the purpose for which that transformation occurs.

Mary is not transformed merely to become another male disciple.

She is transformed so that she may become **alive in Spirit**.

This distinction is the key to understanding the relationship between masculinity, spiritual transformation, and entrance into the Kingdom.

---

1. The Destination Is Life

The most important word in Thomas 114 may not be “male.”

It may be **“living.”**

The saying begins with exclusion from life:

> “women are not worthy of life.”

Jesus' response overturns that judgment.

Mary will become a **living spirit**.

The movement is therefore:

unworthy → transformed → living.

Peter sees a woman who supposedly cannot possess spiritual life.

Jesus reveals a woman capable of becoming spiritually alive.

The final word is therefore not condemnation.

It is **life**.

---

2. Why Transformation Is Necessary

Thomas presents spiritual transformation as necessary because ordinary human identity is incomplete.

Human beings identify themselves through bodies, social roles, desires, and relationships.

But these identities belong to the visible world.

The living spirit belongs to a deeper order.

Transformation is therefore the movement from identification with the temporary toward participation in the eternal.

Mary begins within a category Peter considers incapable of entering the Kingdom.

Jesus leads her beyond that limitation.

The transformation is consequently a movement from **external identity toward spiritual identity**.

---

3. “Male” as the Threshold

The word “male” functions as a threshold in the saying.

It represents a condition that Mary must enter before being described as a living spirit.

Within the symbolic world of Thomas, masculinity can represent:

- spiritual maturity,
- authority,
- initiative,
- independence,
- discernment,
- strength,
- and capacity for action.

Mary's transformation therefore represents the acquisition of spiritual qualities that the ancient world associated with male identity.

But these qualities are not inherently male.

They are human capacities.

Thomas expresses them through masculine symbolism because of the cultural world in which the text emerged.

---

4. The Living Spirit Beyond the Symbol

The phrase “living spirit” moves beyond the symbolism.

Once Mary becomes a living spirit, the distinction between the physical male and female becomes secondary.

The symbol has accomplished its purpose.

It has pointed beyond itself.

This gives the progression:

female → male → living spirit.

But Thomas 22 gives an even deeper formulation:

male and female → one → living spirit.

The two sayings therefore illuminate each other.

---

5. The Living Spirit Is Not Biological Male

If “male” meant only biological anatomy, the phrase “living spirit” would become unnecessary.

The physical transformation would itself be the goal.

But Thomas specifically connects becoming male with becoming spirit.

This suggests that the word “male” functions symbolically.

Mary's physical sex does not need to be erased for her spirit to awaken.

Rather, she must transcend the limitation represented by the feminine category in the saying.

The body remains part of the earthly condition.

The Spirit becomes the deeper identity.

---

6. The Spirit and the Body

The living spirit therefore does not necessarily mean that the body ceases to exist.

The person remains embodied.

The transformation occurs in the relationship between the person and the body.

Before transformation:

The body defines the person.

After transformation:

The Spirit defines the person.

This is the distinction established throughout this book.

The body is the vessel.

The Spirit is the life.

The body is temporary.

The Spirit points toward the eternal.

---

7. The Pauline Parallel

This distinction finds a significant parallel in Paul's language.

Paul contrasts life according to the flesh with life according to the Spirit.

He writes:

> “To set the mind on the flesh is death, but to set the mind on the Spirit is life and peace.”

The vocabulary is different from Thomas.

But the movement is remarkably similar:

flesh → Spirit → life.

Thomas speaks of becoming a living spirit.

Paul speaks of the Spirit giving life.

Both traditions place spiritual existence above the merely fleshly orientation.

---

8. Flesh Is Not Simply the Female

This distinction is essential.

Thomas 114 should not be transformed into the proposition:

female = flesh, male = spirit.

That would be too simplistic.

The New Testament does not make that equation.

Men and women are both capable of living according to the flesh.

Men and women are both capable of living according to the Spirit.

The distinction between flesh and Spirit therefore cuts **through both sexes**.

The male must overcome the flesh.

The female must overcome the flesh.

Both must become spiritually alive.

---

9. The Male Must Become Living Spirit

This prevents the male disciples from assuming that they have already arrived.

Peter may possess the social status represented by maleness.

But Peter himself remains capable of misunderstanding Jesus.

His rejection of Mary demonstrates that biological maleness does not automatically produce spiritual insight.

This is a crucial irony within the saying.

Peter thinks that being male places him above Mary.

But Jesus' response implies that spiritual status must be **attained through transformation**.

Malenness is not salvation.

The living Spirit is salvation.

---

10. The Female Must Become Living Spirit

Likewise, Mary's transformation does not establish permanent female inferiority.

The point is that she must become spiritually alive.

Her spiritual destiny is not to remain permanently defined by Peter's judgment.

She is capable of entering the same Kingdom.

The text therefore contains a paradox:

Mary is initially excluded because she is female, yet the saying ultimately makes her capable of entering the Kingdom.

The transformation overturns the exclusion.

---

11. The Kingdom

The Kingdom is the final destination of the transformation.

Thomas 114 states that women who “make themselves male” will enter the Kingdom of heaven.

The Kingdom therefore belongs to the spiritually transformed.

It is not simply a reward for possessing the correct biological anatomy.

It is an order of existence beyond the limitations represented by the present world.

The living spirit belongs to that order.

---

12. The Kingdom and Spiritual Identity

The Kingdom changes the question of identity.

In the present world, people are identified by:

sex, status, wealth, nationality, family, occupation, appearance, and social position.

The spiritual Kingdom establishes another basis of identity.

The person is known according to Spirit.

This does not mean that earthly characteristics disappear.

It means that they cease to possess ultimate authority.

The Kingdom therefore represents the restoration of the deeper human.

---

13. The Androgynous Spirit

The phrase “living spirit” provides the foundation for the concept developed throughout this book.

The deepest human is neither exclusively masculine nor exclusively feminine.

The spiritual human contains both dimensions.

The male discovers the feminine.

The female discovers the masculine.

The two become one.

The Spirit becomes primary.

This is the **Androgynous Spirit**.

The term does not refer to biological ambiguity.

It refers to spiritual completeness.

---

14. The Masculine Principle as Awakening

Why should the female have to become “male”?

Because within the symbolic vocabulary of Thomas, masculinity represents awakening from passive limitation into active spiritual participation.

The masculine principle signifies:

I see.

I discern.

I choose.

I act.

I take responsibility.

Mary therefore becomes capable of possessing spiritual agency.

The ancient symbol is masculine.

The spiritual reality is human.

---

15. The Feminine Principle as Receptivity

Yet spiritual life also requires receptivity.

One cannot force divine truth into existence.

One must receive.

One must listen.

One must become open.

One must allow transformation.

The feminine principle therefore remains essential.

Without receptivity, masculine initiative becomes self-will.

Without initiative, feminine receptivity can become passivity.

The living spirit contains both.

---

16. The Union of Initiative and Receptivity

The living spirit therefore possesses a fundamental harmony:

initiative + receptivity.

The person acts but also listens.

Leads but also receives.

Discerns but remains open.

Protects but also nurtures.

Commands when necessary but knows when to surrender.

This is the integrated human.

The masculine and feminine principles no longer compete.

They cooperate.

---

17. The Male as Guide

Within the earthly order, the male can occupy a guiding position.

The New Testament household texts associate husbands with responsibility and wives with submission.

But if the male is to serve as a spiritual guide, his guidance must produce life.

The true guide does not demand worship.

He does not cultivate dependence upon himself.

He points toward God.

He protects rather than exploits.

He sacrifices rather than consumes.

He leads toward freedom rather than bondage.

Thus spiritual masculinity becomes **life-giving authority**.

---

18. The Woman's Submission

Submission must likewise be understood within its proper boundaries.

The Pauline and Pastoral traditions present submission within earthly relationships.

But the woman's ultimate spiritual allegiance is not to a human male.

It is to God.

Her submission cannot mean that her conscience disappears.

It cannot mean that she loses spiritual responsibility.

It cannot mean that the male becomes her substitute for God.

Instead, earthly submission belongs to the relational order while spiritual identity belongs to the divine order.

This distinction is essential to the theology.

---

19. The Living Spirit and Freedom

The living spirit is fundamentally free.

Not free from responsibility.

Free from enslavement.

Free from domination by uncontrolled desire.

Free from obsession with bodily identity.

Free from the need to establish superiority.

Free from fear of temporary things.

Free from ignorance.

This is why the living spirit can enter the Kingdom.

It is no longer completely governed by the present age.

---

20. The Present Age and the Kingdom

The present world operates according to different values.

Status.

Competition.

Possession.

Power.

Appearance.

Desire.

The Kingdom operates according to another principle.

Truth.

Life.

Love.

Spirit.

Unity.

The living spirit belongs to the latter order while still living within the former.

The person becomes a pilgrim.

The body remains in the world.

The Spirit begins to live according to the Kingdom.

---

21. The Living Spirit and Death

The phrase “living spirit” also carries an implicit contrast with death.

The body is mortal.

The Spirit seeks life.

Thomas therefore presents spiritual transformation as movement away from the condition represented by death toward the condition represented by life.

The Kingdom is the realm of life.

The living spirit is prepared for that realm.

This corresponds with the broader Christian hope of resurrection and transformation.

---

22. The Transformation of Consciousness

Becoming a living spirit involves transformation of perception.

The person begins to see the body as temporary.

Desire becomes something that can be observed rather than obeyed automatically.

Social hierarchy becomes something that can be questioned.

The distinction between male and female becomes less absolute.

The world is recognized as temporary.

The Kingdom becomes more real.

The person begins to perceive reality through Spirit.

This is awakening.

---

23. The Living Spirit and Knowledge

Thomas repeatedly emphasizes knowledge.

But knowledge is not merely intellectual information.

It is self-recognition.

The person discovers the truth about the self.

The person recognizes the limitations of flesh.

The person recognizes the presence of Spirit.

The person begins to understand the Kingdom.

This knowledge transforms the knower.

The living spirit is therefore a **knowing spirit**.

---

24. The Living Spirit and Love

Knowledge without love can become pride.

Therefore spiritual awakening must also transform relationship.

The living spirit recognizes other people as spiritual beings rather than merely bodies.

The woman is not merely a female body.

The man is not merely a male body.

The other becomes a person.

The relationship becomes communion rather than consumption.

This is the ethical consequence of the mystical transformation.

---

25. The Living Spirit and the Other

Once the person recognizes the deeper Spirit within themselves, they can begin to recognize it in others.

The woman becomes more than her sex.

The man becomes more than his sex.

The subordinate becomes more than their social position.

The stranger becomes more than an outsider.

The person becomes capable of seeing beyond appearances.

This is spiritual perception.

---

26. The Two Become One

Thomas 22 therefore remains essential.

The living spirit emerges through reconciliation.

The male and female become one.

The inner and outer become one.

The above and below become one.

The fragmented consciousness becomes one.

The person becomes internally unified.

The living spirit is therefore not simply an individual soul floating free from embodiment.

It is the **integrated human**.

---

27. The Living Spirit and Resurrection

Paul's language of transformation provides another dimension.

The present body is described as temporary.

The future involves transformation.

This provides a Christian framework for understanding the Thomasine living spirit.

The spiritual identity is not ultimately destroyed by bodily mortality.

Instead, the human being is transformed.

The Kingdom is therefore not merely an escape from embodiment.

It is a transformed mode of existence.

---

28. The Final Identity

The final identity is therefore not:

male.

Nor:

female.

Nor merely:

androgynous.

These are stages and symbols.

The deepest identity is:

living spirit.

This is the identity toward which all the symbolism points.

---

29. The Meaning of “Making Herself Male”

The phrase can therefore be understood as a spiritual imperative.

Mary must become capable of embodying the qualities represented by the masculine symbol.

She must become spiritually mature.

She must become active in knowledge.

She must become capable of discernment.

She must become responsible for her spiritual path.

She must cease allowing her bodily classification to define her spiritual destiny.

Then she becomes a living spirit.

---

30. The Transformation Is Universal

Although Thomas 114 speaks specifically about women, the underlying transformation applies to everyone.

Every person must transcend exclusive identification with the flesh.

Every person must awaken.

Every person must integrate the masculine and feminine dimensions.

Every person must become spiritually alive.

Every person must move toward the Kingdom.

Mary therefore becomes a representative of humanity.

Her transformation is an image of the universal spiritual journey.

---

31. The Kingdom as Unity

The Kingdom is ultimately the realm of unity.

The divisions that dominate the present age lose their final authority.

Male and female are reconciled.

The spiritual and earthly are brought into harmony.

The individual is reconciled within.

The human being becomes whole.

The Kingdom is therefore not merely another place.

It is a **state of restored relationship with divine reality**.

---

32. From Division to Life

The whole movement can be summarized:

Division → transformation → integration → unity → life.

Peter begins with division.

Mary is excluded.

Jesus introduces transformation.

The masculine principle becomes a symbol of spiritual maturity.

The masculine and feminine are reconciled.

Mary becomes a living spirit.

The Kingdom becomes accessible.

The final result is life.

---

33. The Mystery of the Living Spirit

The living spirit is therefore the deepest identity available to the human being.

It is hidden beneath the body.

It is obscured by desire.

It is distracted by worldly status.

It is divided by social categories.

It is awakened through spiritual knowledge.

It is integrated through transformation.

It is directed toward the Kingdom.

The living spirit is the human being becoming what the human being was capable of becoming all along.

Conclusion — Becoming Alive

The phrase **“make her male”** cannot be understood adequately without the phrase that follows:

> **“that she too may become a living spirit.”**

The second phrase reveals the purpose of the first.

The goal is not masculinity for its own sake.

The goal is **spiritual life**.

Mary's transformation represents the passage from bodily limitation to spiritual fullness.

The masculine principle provides the symbol of awakening, agency, discernment, and maturity.

The feminine principle provides receptivity, nurture, compassion, and relational depth.

The two must ultimately be reconciled.

Thus:

The woman becomes more than woman.

The man becomes more than man.

The two become one.

The one becomes living Spirit.

And the living Spirit becomes capable of entering the Kingdom.

The mystery is therefore not ultimately about changing one biological sex into another.

It is about discovering the human being hidden beneath both.

The body is divided.
The Spirit is one.

The flesh is temporary.
The Spirit gives life.
The Kingdom belongs to the living.

Part II — The Gospel of Thomas

Chapter 9 — Mary and the Restoration of the Feminine

Mary stands at the center of the mystery introduced by Thomas 114.

She enters the saying as a woman rejected by Peter.

She is described according to her bodily sex.

She is declared unworthy of life.

Yet Jesus responds not by accepting the judgment, but by promising transformation.

Mary will be led beyond the condition in which Peter has confined her.

She will become “male.”

And through that transformation she will become a **living spirit**.

Mary therefore becomes an image of the embodied human being discovering a deeper spiritual identity.

Her story begins with the feminine as a category of exclusion.

It ends with the feminine restored to spiritual life.

---

1. Mary as the Rejected Woman

Peter's statement is absolute:

> “Let Mary go out from among us, because women are not worthy of life.”

The woman is treated as spiritually deficient because of her sex.

There is no distinction between Mary's body and her spirit.

Her biological identity becomes the basis for judging her spiritual worth.

This is the perspective that the saying places before the reader at the beginning.

Mary is not rejected because she lacks intelligence.

She is not rejected because she lacks devotion.

She is not rejected because she has committed some particular sin.

She is rejected because she is **female**.

This makes Jesus' response especially significant.

---

2. Jesus Sees Beyond the Category

Jesus does not accept Peter's conclusion.

Instead, he promises to lead Mary toward transformation.

This introduces the central distinction of the Androgynous Spirit:

the body is not the entirety of the person.

Peter sees:

woman.

Jesus sees:

a person capable of becoming a living spirit.

The difference is not merely social.

It is metaphysical.

Peter identifies Mary according to the flesh.

Jesus identifies her according to her spiritual potential.

---

3. Mary as Embodied Female

Mary nevertheless begins from embodiment.

She is not presented as an abstract spirit.

She is a woman.

Her female body places her within the earthly order.

She possesses the qualities, limitations, social expectations, and vulnerabilities associated with that condition.

The spiritual journey does not begin by pretending that embodiment does not exist.

It begins by recognizing that embodiment is **not final**.

Mary's female body is therefore the starting point of transformation.

It is not the destination.

---

4. The Female as a Symbol of Receptivity

Within the symbolic framework of this book, the feminine represents receptivity.

The feminine receives.

It nurtures.

It preserves.

It gives life.

It forms relationships.

It creates spaces in which life can develop.

These are not signs of spiritual inferiority.

They are dimensions of human existence.

Yet receptivity can become distorted when it is reduced to passivity.

A person can become so identified with receiving that they cease to act.

The transformation represented by Mary therefore involves the integration of **receptivity with spiritual agency**.

---

5. Mary and Spiritual Agency

Jesus' promise that Mary will be “made male” can be interpreted as the granting of spiritual agency.

She will no longer be merely an object of Peter's judgment.

She becomes an active participant in the spiritual path.

She is capable of knowledge.

She is capable of discernment.

She is capable of transformation.

She is capable of entering the Kingdom.

The male symbolism therefore represents a transition from socially imposed passivity toward spiritual participation.

Mary becomes responsible for her own spiritual transformation.

---

6. The Feminine Is Not Destroyed

This distinction is crucial.

Mary's transformation does not require the destruction of the feminine.

The goal is not:

woman → no longer human.

Nor is it:

woman → biologically male.

The deeper movement is:

woman → integrated human → living spirit.

The feminine becomes part of a greater unity.

Mary's embodied identity remains the context in which her transformation occurs.

But her spirit becomes larger than that identity.

---

7. The Masculine Received by the Feminine

Mary's transformation can therefore be described as the feminine receiving the masculine principle.

She receives:

strength, initiative, discernment, authority, discipline, and spiritual courage.

These qualities allow receptivity to become active participation.

The feminine becomes capable of moving toward the Kingdom rather than simply waiting outside its gates.

This is the symbolic force of becoming “male.”

---

8. The Feminine Restored

But restoration requires more than acquiring masculine qualities.

The feminine itself must be restored to its proper spiritual dignity.

Mary's capacity to receive does not disappear.

Her relational nature does not disappear.

Her compassion does not disappear.

Her feminine embodiment does not disappear.

Instead, these qualities become integrated with spiritual strength.

The result is not masculine domination over femininity.

It is **integration**.

The feminine becomes spiritually whole.

---

9. Mary and Thomas 22

Thomas 114 must therefore be interpreted through Thomas 22.

Thomas 22 says:

> "Make the two one."

This means that Mary cannot be understood merely as a woman who must abandon femininity and become masculine.

Her transformation must ultimately lead toward unity.

The masculine enters the feminine.

The feminine is not annihilated.

The two become one.

Mary becomes a living spirit.

---

10. The Feminine Within the Male

The restoration of the feminine also requires the transformation of men.

The male disciples cannot remain entirely identified with masculinity.

They must discover the feminine dimension within themselves.

They must become receptive.

They must become compassionate.

They must learn tenderness.

They must learn humility.

They must become capable of nurturing spiritual life.

The restoration of the feminine is therefore not merely something that happens to women.

It happens within humanity as a whole.

---

11. The Male Must Also Be Restored

The male is also distorted by the fleshly order.

Masculinity can become:

- domination,
- aggression,
- pride,
- lust,
- possessiveness,
- violence,
- authoritarianism.

The masculine principle therefore requires redemption.

The true male must learn that strength exists for service.

Authority exists for responsibility.

Leadership exists for the good of others.

Power exists to protect rather than consume.

The restoration of the feminine therefore helps restore the masculine as well.

---

12. Mary as a Mirror

Mary becomes a mirror through which both sexes can see themselves.

The woman sees that her body does not determine the limits of her spirit.

The man sees that his body does not guarantee spiritual superiority.

Both must undergo transformation.

Both must discover the living Spirit.

Both must become whole.

Mary therefore ceases to be merely a female character in an ancient saying.

She becomes an archetype of humanity.

---

13. The Body and the Spirit

Mary's story reinforces the distinction between body and Spirit.

Her body is female.

Her spiritual destiny is not limited to femaleness.

The same principle applies to the male.

His body is male.

His spiritual destiny is not limited to maleness.

The body gives the person a visible form.

The Spirit gives the person a deeper orientation.

The human being exists at the intersection of the two.

---

14. The Present Age

The present age constantly reinforces bodily identity.

People are evaluated according to appearance.

Sexual attractiveness becomes a source of power.

Gender becomes a social hierarchy.

The body becomes an object of consumption.

Mary's story challenges this reduction.

She is more than the category Peter assigns to her.

Her value cannot be determined by her biological sex.

Her spiritual potential cannot be measured by the social hierarchy of the present age.

---

15. The World That Says “Unworthy”

Peter's declaration can be understood as a symbol of the worldly voice.

The world continually tells people:

You are only your body.

You are only your social position.

You are only what others see.

You are only what others desire.

You are only what society permits you to be.

Mary's transformation answers:

No embodied category exhausts the spiritual human.

The Spirit reaches beyond the judgment of the world.

---

16. The Kingdom as Restoration

Mary's destination is the Kingdom.

The Kingdom therefore represents restoration.

What was excluded becomes included.

What was considered spiritually dead becomes living.

What was regarded as inferior becomes capable of divine participation.

The Kingdom reverses the hierarchy of the present age.

It reveals the deeper worth of the person.

---

17. The Female and the Kingdom

The saying therefore contains an important paradox.

It begins by denying women access to life.

It ends by affirming the possibility that women can enter the Kingdom through transformation.

The woman's destiny is therefore not exclusion.

It is participation.

The transformation is the means by which the text resolves its own contradiction.

Mary becomes a living spirit.

She enters the Kingdom.

The excluded becomes included.

---

18. The Meaning of Restoration

Restoration does not mean returning to a previous social arrangement.

It means recovering the deeper spiritual identity.

The feminine is restored when it is no longer treated as spiritually inferior.

The masculine is restored when it is no longer reduced to domination.

The two are restored when they become complementary.

The human is restored when the divisions are reconciled.

Thus restoration occurs at several levels:

female restored,

male restored,

relationship restored,

humanity restored,

Spirit restored to conscious primacy.

---

19. Mary and the Divine Image

Genesis presents humanity as created in the divine image.

Mary therefore participates in that image.

Her femaleness does not remove her from humanity.

Her body does not erase the divine image.

Her transformation reveals that the image is deeper than sex.

The masculine and feminine both participate in humanity.

The divine image therefore cannot belong exclusively to men.

Mary's restoration is consequently a restoration of the feminine aspect of the human reflection of God.

---

20. The Feminine as Image-Bearer

The woman is therefore not spiritually secondary by nature.

She bears the divine image.

She possesses the capacity for spiritual knowledge.

She possesses the capacity for transformation.

She possesses the capacity for communion with God.

She possesses the capacity to become a living spirit.

Thomas 114 begins with an exclusion of this truth.

Jesus' response reveals it.

---

21. Submission Revisited

The broader New Testament tradition contains teachings about female submission.

These teachings must be distinguished from the question of spiritual worth.

A woman may submit within a particular earthly relationship without becoming spiritually inferior.

Likewise, a man may exercise earthly authority without becoming spiritually superior.

The spiritual order transcends the social hierarchy.

This distinction allows the household teachings to coexist, within the synthesis developed here, with the spiritual unity expressed in Thomas and Paul.

---

22. The Male as Servant

If the male possesses earthly authority, then that authority carries responsibility.

The Christian model of leadership is ultimately sacrificial.

The male must therefore use strength to serve.

His role is not to crush the feminine.

His role is to protect and cultivate life.

This transforms the meaning of masculine authority.

The true male becomes an instrument of restoration.

---

23. Mary as Restored Receptivity

Mary's transformation does not erase receptivity.

Instead, receptivity becomes conscious.

She receives spiritual truth voluntarily.

She receives transformation.

She receives the Kingdom.

She becomes an active participant in what she receives.

Thus the feminine becomes both receptive and active.

This is spiritual integration.

---

24. The Living Spirit in the Female

The ultimate restoration of the feminine occurs when the woman recognizes:

I am not merely this body.

She is embodied female.

But she is also Spirit.

She possesses a spiritual identity deeper than bodily classification.

She can therefore participate fully in spiritual life.

The woman becomes a living spirit.

---

25. The Living Spirit in the Male

The same realization must occur in men.

The male must recognize:

I am not merely this body.

He is embodied male.

But he is also Spirit.

His spiritual identity is not guaranteed by masculinity.

He must become humble.

He must become compassionate.

He must become disciplined.

He must become spiritually alive.

The male becomes a living spirit.

---

26. The Two Are Reconciled

Once both recognize their deeper identity, the male and female can encounter one another differently.

The man no longer sees the woman merely as an object.

The woman no longer sees the man merely as an authority.

Both recognize the spiritual human within the other.

Difference remains.

But hostility decreases.

The relationship becomes capable of communion.

This is the restoration of relationship.

---

27. Mary and the Androgynous Human

Mary therefore becomes one of the clearest symbols of the Androgynous Human.

She begins as female.

She receives the masculine principle.

She moves toward spiritual unity.

She becomes a living spirit.

Her journey demonstrates that the feminine does not have to remain imprisoned within a narrow bodily identity.

But neither does the feminine need to disappear.

It becomes integrated.

---

28. The Deeper Identity

The deeper identity of Mary is therefore neither simply:

woman

nor simply:

male.

It is:

living spirit.

This is the decisive point.

The symbol changes.

The destination remains spiritual.

The human being discovers an identity deeper than sex.

---

29. Restoration Through Christ

Within a broader Christian synthesis, this transformation can be understood through Christ.

Christ is the center of reconciliation.

In Christ, distinctions no longer determine ultimate spiritual worth.

The male and female become one in a new humanity.

Mary's transformation therefore becomes an image of the restoration accomplished through divine grace.

The Spirit restores what the flesh has divided.

---

30. From Rejection to Recognition

Mary's journey can therefore be described as:

rejection → recognition → transformation → integration → life.

Peter rejects her.

Jesus recognizes her potential.

Transformation begins.

Masculine and feminine become integrated.

Mary becomes alive in Spirit.

This is the pattern of spiritual restoration.

---

31. The Feminine Is Not the Enemy

The feminine itself is not the obstacle.

The obstacle is **identification with limitation**.

Mary's femaleness is not sin.

Peter's assumption that femaleness determines spiritual worth is the deeper problem.

The woman must therefore not hate herself.

She must transcend the limitations imposed upon her.

The feminine is not destroyed.

It is restored.

---

32. The Male Is Not the Enemy

Likewise, masculinity itself is not the enemy.

The masculine becomes destructive when detached from compassion and responsibility.

The spiritually mature male integrates the feminine.

The masculine is therefore restored through integration.

The male becomes capable of giving life rather than dominating it.

---

33. The Restoration of Humanity

The restoration of the feminine and restoration of the masculine are ultimately the same process.

Both require the recovery of the complete human.

The human being is divided by the flesh.

The Spirit reunites.

The male and female become one.

The living spirit emerges.

Humanity becomes whole.

---

34. Mary as the Doorway

Mary's story therefore becomes a doorway into the larger mystery.

She demonstrates that the person whom society declares spiritually inferior can become spiritually alive.

She demonstrates that bodily identity is not destiny.

She demonstrates that transformation is possible.

She demonstrates that the Kingdom is accessible beyond the categories of the flesh.

She demonstrates that the hidden Spirit can awaken.

---

35. The Kingdom Beyond Gendered Worth

The final Kingdom cannot be governed by the hierarchy Peter assumes.

The Kingdom does not belong to those who possess the socially dominant body.

It belongs to the transformed.

The living spirit enters.

The divided human enters.

The person who has discovered unity enters.

Thus the Kingdom becomes the ultimate reversal of Peter's judgment.

Conclusion — Mary Restored

Mary begins the story under condemnation.

She is told, through Peter's voice, that women are not worthy of life.

Jesus refuses to allow that judgment to have the final word.

Mary will be transformed.

She will become “male.”

But the purpose of that transformation is greater than masculinity.

She will become a **living spirit**.

She will enter the Kingdom.

Her journey therefore represents the restoration of the feminine at the deepest level.

The female body is not denied.

The feminine principle is not destroyed.

Instead, the feminine is liberated from the assumption that it is spiritually inferior.

The masculine is received.

The feminine is retained.

The two are reconciled.

The human becomes whole.

Mary therefore becomes a symbol of the mystery expressed throughout this book:

The body gives form.
The Spirit gives life.
The masculine gives direction.
The feminine gives receptivity.
The two become one.
And the one becomes living Spirit.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 10 — The Woman and the Man

The Gospel of Thomas presents male and female through the language of mystical transformation. The Pauline and Pastoral writings approach the distinction differently. They address the practical organization of human life: marriage, family, authority, responsibility, sexuality, teaching, and the ordering of the Christian community.

This earthly order must therefore be distinguished from the deeper spiritual identity explored in the preceding chapters.

The central proposition of this chapter is:

Male and female are distinct within embodied social existence, while neither distinction exhausts the spiritual identity of the human being.

The man and woman inhabit the same humanity, bear the divine image, and remain capable of spiritual life. Yet the biblical household tradition assigns them differentiated responsibilities.

Understanding this distinction allows the social order and the mystical order to be held together without confusing them.

---

1. Male and Female in the Created Order

Genesis provides the foundational biblical distinction:

> "Male and female he created them."

The distinction is presented within the creation of humanity itself.

The biblical account therefore does not treat sexual differentiation as an accidental feature of human existence.

Human beings appear in the world as embodied male and female.

This distinction has biological consequences.

It establishes reproductive complementarity.

It contributes to family formation.

It shapes marriage.

It influences social relationships.

The biblical tradition therefore takes embodied sex seriously.

But recognizing the reality of sex does not require concluding that biological sex determines the entirety of spiritual identity.

That distinction becomes essential throughout the New Testament.

---

2. One Humanity, Two Sexes

The male and female are therefore best understood as two embodied expressions of one humanity.

The man is human.

The woman is human.

Both possess rational and spiritual capacities.

Both are capable of moral responsibility.

Both can respond to God.

Both can enter the Kingdom.

The distinction between them therefore cannot become a distinction between two levels of human worth.

The earthly order may differentiate their responsibilities.

The spiritual order does not reduce one to a lesser kind of human being.

This distinction becomes especially important when reading passages concerning authority and submission.

---

3. The Meaning of Social Order

The biblical writers were not merely discussing abstract metaphysics.

They were addressing communities.

Communities require relationships.

Families require responsibilities.

Marriage requires fidelity.

Children require care.

Leaders require authority.

Members require discipline.

The Pauline and Pastoral writings therefore establish forms of social order intended to govern ordinary life.

The question is not whether social order exists.

It does.

The question is **what kind of order it should be**.

Biblical authority is repeatedly connected with responsibility.

The person who leads is expected to serve.

The person who possesses strength is expected to protect.

The person entrusted with authority is accountable for its use.

---

4. The Man Within the Household

The Pauline household tradition gives the husband a particular position within marriage.

Ephesians tells wives to submit to their husbands and then gives husbands a corresponding command:

> “Husbands, love your wives, as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her.”

This qualification is fundamental.

The husband's authority is not presented merely as privilege.

It is connected with **sacrificial love**.

The model is Christ.

Christ does not exercise authority merely to glorify himself.

He gives himself for others.

The husband's authority therefore becomes meaningful only when it is ordered toward the good of the wife and household.

---

5. Authority and Sacrifice

The biblical concept of authority differs fundamentally from simple domination.

Domination asks:

How much can I control?

Biblical leadership asks:

How much responsibility am I willing to bear?

The distinction is crucial.

A man who demands obedience while refusing responsibility has misunderstood authority.

A man who uses his position to exploit his wife has corrupted authority.

The Christian model demands that authority be accompanied by sacrifice.

The stronger person bears greater responsibility.

The leader serves those entrusted to him.

---

6. The Woman Within the Household

The Pauline and Pastoral writings assign women particular responsibilities within the household.

Titus instructs older women to teach younger women regarding marriage, children, self-control, purity, and household responsibilities.

The texts therefore envision women as important participants in the formation of family life.

Submission does not mean irrelevance.

The woman remains a teacher within appropriate relationships.

She nurtures.

She instructs.

She preserves tradition.

She forms the next generation.

She contributes substantially to the stability of the household.

The social role is differentiated, but it is not meaningless.

---

7. Submission

The word **submission** must be understood carefully.

In the New Testament household tradition, submission is relational.

It describes an ordering of relationships.

It does not necessarily mean that the woman possesses an inferior spiritual nature.

This distinction is essential to the theology developed in this book.

The husband may occupy a position of earthly authority.

The wife may occupy a position of earthly submission.

Yet both remain spiritually accountable to God.

The husband's authority does not make him the woman's God.

The wife's submission does not remove her conscience.

Both remain responsible before the divine.

---

8. Submission and Love

The biblical household order becomes distorted when submission is separated from love.

If the wife is commanded to submit, the husband is simultaneously commanded to love sacrificially.

This creates a reciprocal moral structure.

The husband's authority places demands upon him.

The wife's submission places demands upon her.

Neither is permitted simply to pursue selfishness.

Marriage becomes a discipline of self-giving.

The husband must overcome selfish domination.

The wife must overcome selfish resistance.

Both are called toward the good of the household.

---

9. The Man as Head

Ephesians uses the language of the husband as the **head** of the wife.

This language has generated extensive theological interpretation.

Within the framework of this book, headship represents ordered responsibility.

The head is not merely the person who gives commands.

The head bears responsibility for the health of the body.

The metaphor therefore becomes meaningful when interpreted through Christ.

Christ is the head of the church.

Yet Christ's headship is manifested through self-giving love.

The husband therefore cannot legitimately use headship as an excuse for cruelty.

Headship must imitate Christ.

---

10. The Woman as the Body

The body metaphor also complicates simplistic hierarchy.

A head without a body cannot function.

A body without a head cannot function normally.

The relationship is interdependent.

The husband and wife therefore remain distinct while forming one household.

The distinction is functional.

The unity is relational.

The two participate in one life.

This corresponds with the biblical statement:

> “The two shall become one flesh.”

The marriage becomes a union without requiring the destruction of distinction.

---

11. The Two as One Flesh

The phrase “one flesh” provides an important bridge between biblical household teaching and the mystical language of Thomas.

Marriage does not eliminate male and female.

It joins them.

The husband remains male.

The wife remains female.

Yet they participate in one embodied union.

This provides an earthly analogy for the spiritual principle of **making the two one**.

Difference can exist within unity.

Unity does not require sameness.

---

12. Male Authority and Female Dignity

The challenge is therefore to preserve two truths simultaneously.

First:

the biblical household tradition establishes differentiated roles.

Second:

differentiated roles do not require inferior spiritual worth.

The woman remains a bearer of the divine image.

She remains capable of faith.

She remains capable of holiness.

She remains capable of spiritual knowledge.

She remains capable of becoming a living spirit.

The social hierarchy therefore cannot be converted into an ontological hierarchy of souls.

---

13. The Pastoral Epistles

The Pastoral Epistles provide some of the strongest statements concerning differentiated gender roles.

1 Timothy addresses women learning, teaching, and authority.

Titus addresses women's responsibilities within family life.

These texts reflect a particular ecclesial and social order.

They should therefore be interpreted within their historical and theological context.

The existence of such an order does not erase the broader New Testament teaching that salvation is available to both sexes.

The woman can enter the Kingdom.

The man can enter the Kingdom.

Both require transformation.

---

14. The Woman and Teaching

1 Timothy contains a restriction concerning women teaching or exercising authority over men.

Whatever one's interpretation of its historical circumstances, the passage establishes that the author envisioned differentiated authority within the Christian community.

The important question for this book is how this relates to spiritual identity.

The answer is:

authority is a function; Spirit is an identity.

A restriction upon a particular social function does not necessarily establish that women possess inferior spiritual capacity.

This distinction allows the passage to be read without reducing the woman to spiritual passivity.

---

15. The Woman and Learning

The same passage begins by saying:

> "Let a woman learn…"

This detail is significant.

The woman is not excluded from learning itself.

She is instructed to learn within a particular order.

This means that female discipleship remains possible.

The woman can acquire knowledge.

She can develop wisdom.

She can become spiritually mature.

The question concerns the form and boundaries of her public authority, not her ability to receive spiritual truth.

---

16. The Man and Responsibility

The male's social authority therefore creates corresponding obligations.

He must exercise self-control.

He must manage his household well.

He must demonstrate maturity.

He must be respectable.

He must be capable of caring for others.

Biblical leadership is therefore tested by character.

A man does not become spiritually authoritative merely because he is male.

He must demonstrate virtue.

The flesh gives him a body.

Character determines how he uses his position.

Spirit determines the deeper orientation.

17. The Woman and Strength

Likewise, the woman is not portrayed in Scripture simply as weak.

The biblical tradition contains powerful female figures:

Deborah,

Ruth,

Esther,

Mary,

Priscilla,

and others.

The very existence of such figures demonstrates that female spirituality cannot be reduced to passive submission.

Women can display courage, wisdom, faith, intelligence, loyalty, and spiritual insight.

Thus the differentiated household order should not be interpreted as a claim that women possess no capacity for strength or leadership.

18. The Spiritual Order

The social order must therefore be distinguished from the spiritual order.

The social order concerns:

marriage, family, authority, responsibility, teaching, and community organization.

The spiritual order concerns:

faith, Spirit, transformation, salvation, knowledge of God, and the Kingdom.

These orders overlap.

They do not become identical.

A woman may occupy a subordinate role in a particular earthly relationship while possessing profound spiritual maturity.

A man may possess authority while remaining spiritually immature.

Social position does not guarantee spiritual attainment.

---

19. The Fleshly Temptation of Hierarchy

Human beings frequently transform social distinctions into claims of absolute superiority.

The husband becomes convinced:

I am better because I am the head.

The wife becomes convinced:

I am worthless because I am subordinate.

Both conclusions distort the spiritual reality.

The first turns authority into pride.

The second turns submission into self-contempt.

The biblical framework calls both persons toward humility.

Authority must become service.

Submission must remain dignified.

Both must be oriented toward God.

---

20. The Spiritual Meaning of Headship

Headship can therefore be understood as a vocation of responsibility.

The man is entrusted with leadership.

Leadership means:

protecting, providing, guiding, sacrificing, disciplining oneself, and seeking the good of those entrusted to one's care.

The greater the authority, the greater the responsibility.

This principle prevents headship from becoming a license for domination.

The man who wants authority without responsibility has misunderstood the biblical model.

---

21. The Spiritual Meaning of Submission

Submission likewise becomes a vocation of ordered cooperation.

The woman is called to respect the household order.

But submission does not require abandoning moral discernment.

She remains responsible before God.

She remains capable of recognizing truth and falsehood.

She remains a spiritual person.

Submission therefore belongs to relational order, not absolute spiritual identity.

---

22. The Relationship Between the Two

The ideal relationship is therefore not:

master and slave.

It is:

leader and partner.

The man leads.

The woman cooperates.

The man sacrifices.

The woman supports.

The man protects.

The woman nurtures.

But these functions overlap.

The man can nurture.

The woman can protect.

The man can receive.

The woman can lead in appropriate circumstances.

The symbolic principles are not rigid biological laws.

They are dimensions of a larger human relationship.

---

23. The Androgynous Dimension of Marriage

Marriage therefore provides a powerful image of the Androgynous Spirit.

Two people remain male and female.

Yet they become one flesh.

Each gives something the other lacks.

Each receives something from the other.

Each becomes more complete through relationship.

The union therefore reveals something that neither possesses alone.

The two become one without ceasing to be two.

This is precisely the mystical principle developed in Thomas 22.

---

24. The Household as Spiritual Discipline

Marriage can therefore become a school of spiritual transformation.

The husband learns sacrifice.

The wife learns cooperation.

The husband learns tenderness.

The wife learns trust.

The husband learns responsibility.

The wife learns receptivity.

Both learn patience.

Both learn forgiveness.

Both learn to surrender selfishness.

The household becomes a place where fleshly ego can be transformed into spiritual character.

---

25. The Present Age and the Household

The household exists within the present age.

It is therefore subject to the limitations of the flesh.

Desire can corrupt marriage.

Possessiveness can replace love.

Authority can become domination.

Submission can become humiliation.

Sex can become consumption.

The spiritual task is to transform these forces.

Marriage must become more than the satisfaction of biological desire.

It becomes a relationship ordered toward mutual flourishing.

---

26. The Man and Woman Before God

Despite differentiated earthly roles, both stand before God.

Neither can substitute the other.

The husband cannot repent for his wife.

The wife cannot believe for her husband.

Each must become spiritually alive.

Each must answer for their own actions.

Each must seek truth.

Each must cultivate virtue.

Each must ultimately encounter God.

The spiritual order therefore preserves individual responsibility within relational hierarchy.

---

27. Christ as the Pattern

The final model for Christian authority is Christ.

Christ leads through service.

Christ exercises authority through love.

Christ sacrifices himself.

Christ does not use power merely for personal gratification.

This transforms the meaning of male leadership.

The Christian man who exercises authority must therefore ask:

Does my authority give life?

If it does not, it has ceased to resemble Christ.

---

28. Mary as the Counterpoint

Mary provides the mystical counterpoint.

She begins as the woman whom Peter rejects.

Yet she is capable of becoming a living spirit.

Thus the woman who appears socially subordinate can possess extraordinary spiritual destiny.

This prevents the earthly household hierarchy from becoming a hierarchy of souls.

The man may lead the household.

But the woman can still become a saint.

She can become spiritually awakened.

She can enter the Kingdom.

She can become a living spirit.

---

29. The Social and the Mystical

The distinction can now be stated clearly:

The social order answers: “How should people relate within earthly life?”

The mystical order answers: “What is the human being in relation to God?”

The first can contain differentiated roles.

The second transcends those roles.

Confusing them creates either social chaos or spiritual oppression.

Keeping them distinct allows both dimensions to be considered.

---

30. The Final Equality of Spirit

The deepest equality is not necessarily sameness of function.

It is equality of spiritual possibility.

The man can become Spirit.

The woman can become Spirit.

The man can enter the Kingdom.

The woman can enter the Kingdom.

The man can become whole.

The woman can become whole.

Both can discover the hidden human.

Both can become living spirits.

Conclusion — The Woman and the Man

The biblical household tradition presents male and female as differentiated within earthly social order.

The man is associated with headship and responsibility.

The woman is associated with submission and household formation.

But these distinctions do not require the conclusion that one possesses a superior spiritual nature.

The woman remains an image-bearer.

The man remains accountable.

Both are embodied.

Both experience desire.

Both are subject to mortality.

Both require transformation.

And both possess the possibility of becoming spiritually alive.

Thus the earthly order and the mystical order can be distinguished:

The flesh differentiates.

The household orders.

The Spirit unifies.

The man and woman remain distinct within the visible world.

Yet beneath those distinctions stands one humanity, one divine image, and one spiritual destiny.

The movement toward the Androgynous Spirit therefore does not abolish earthly difference.

It places earthly difference within a greater unity.

Male and female in the flesh.
One humanity in creation.
One Spirit in the Kingdom.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 11 — "Let the Woman Learn in Silence"

1 Timothy 2:11–15 and the Question of Authority, Teaching, and Submission

Few passages in the Pastoral Epistles have generated as much discussion as 1 Timothy 2:11–15. The passage addresses women learning, teaching, authority, Adam and Eve, and the meaning of salvation.

Read superficially, it can appear to establish a simple proposition:

man teaches; woman remains silent.

But the passage is more precise than that.

The text first says:

> "Let a woman learn quietly with all submissiveness."

The woman is therefore not excluded from learning.

She is commanded to **learn**.

The controversy concerns the manner of learning, the exercise of authority, and the particular ecclesial order envisioned by the author.

For the theology developed in this book, the passage must therefore be placed alongside the distinction established in the preceding chapters:

earthly authority is not identical with spiritual worth.

---

1. The Passage

The passage can be summarized in four movements:

1. The woman is instructed to learn quietly and submissively.
2. The author does not permit a woman to teach or exercise authority over a man in the particular setting addressed.
3. Adam and Eve are invoked as theological justification.
4. The passage concludes with a difficult statement concerning the woman's being “saved through childbearing.”

The argument therefore moves from:

learning → authority → creation → salvation.

Each part must be examined separately.

---

2. “Let a Woman Learn”

The first command is easily overlooked.

Paul—or the author writing in Paul's name, depending upon one's historical view of the Pastorals—says:

> “Let a woman learn…”

This is significant.

The woman is not told that she is incapable of understanding theology.

She is not forbidden from receiving instruction.

She is not excluded from discipleship.

She is placed in the position of a learner.

This establishes an important principle:

female spiritual learning is legitimate.

---

3. Learning as Spiritual Formation

Learning is itself a spiritual activity.

To learn is to seek truth.

To listen is to receive instruction.

To receive instruction is to cultivate wisdom.

The woman therefore participates in the formation of the Christian mind.

This matters for the theology of the living spirit.

The living spirit is not an ignorant spirit.

It seeks knowledge.

It seeks truth.

It seeks understanding.

Therefore the command that women learn can actually be understood as an affirmation of their capacity for spiritual formation.

---

4. What Does “Silence” Mean?

The phrase is often translated:

“Let the woman learn in silence.”

But the underlying Greek term *hēsychia* can also carry the sense of **quietness, peacefulness, or tranquility**.

It does not necessarily mean absolute muteness in every circumstance.

The same term can refer to a quiet or orderly manner of life.

This matters because the passage should not automatically be interpreted as:

women may never speak.

The immediate context concerns teaching and authority.

The emphasis is therefore more naturally understood as a restriction upon a particular kind of authoritative activity rather than an absolute prohibition of female speech.

---

5. Quietness and Submission

The woman is instructed to learn:

quietly

and

with submissiveness.

The two concepts belong together.

The learner receives instruction rather than asserting authority over the teacher.

The text therefore establishes a posture of receptivity.

This corresponds symbolically with the feminine principle described earlier.

The feminine receives.

The feminine listens.

The feminine allows itself to be instructed.

But receptivity is not the same as spiritual inferiority.

It is a posture within a particular learning relationship.

---

6. The Restriction on Teaching

The controversial statement follows:

> "I do not permit a woman to teach or to exercise authority over a man."

Whatever its precise historical application, the text clearly envisions differentiated authority between men and women in the community addressed by the author.

The question is why.

The passage immediately turns to Genesis.

Adam and Eve become part of the argument.

Thus the author grounds the restriction in a theological interpretation of creation and the Fall.

---

7. Adam and Eve

The author states:

> “For Adam was formed first, then Eve.”

The argument begins with **order of creation**.

Adam appears first.

Eve appears afterward.

The author interprets this sequence as relevant to authority.

The text therefore sees creation order as having theological significance.

This provides a basis for differentiated roles.

But creation order should not automatically be transformed into a claim that Eve possesses less spiritual worth.

The text is addressing authority.

It is not explicitly declaring that women possess inferior souls.

---

8. Eve and Deception

The passage continues by saying:

> “Adam was not deceived, but the woman was deceived…”

The author therefore connects Eve's deception with the restriction.

This establishes another theological rationale:

susceptibility to deception → need for ordered teaching and authority.

Within the author's reasoning, the church must therefore preserve doctrinal order.

The concern is not merely social dominance.

It is theological protection.

The community must guard itself against false teaching.

---

9. The Historical Setting

Understanding the Pastoral Epistles historically is important.

The early Christian communities existed within societies possessing established expectations concerning men and women.

Public teaching and authority were strongly gendered.

The Christian community did not emerge in a social vacuum.

The instructions of 1 Timothy therefore address a particular community facing particular concerns.

The text may reflect both Christian theological convictions and the social assumptions of its historical environment.

Recognizing this context does not require dismissing the passage.

It helps determine how the passage should be understood.

---

10. Authority and Spiritual Identity

The key distinction remains:

authority is a role; Spirit is an identity.

A person can lack a particular ecclesiastical authority while possessing profound spiritual maturity.

A person can possess authority while lacking wisdom.

Therefore the restriction on women exercising authority over men cannot logically establish that women are spiritually inferior.

It establishes a particular order of authority.

The spiritual identity of the woman remains deeper.

---

11. Mary as a Counterpoint

Thomas 114 provides an interesting counterpoint.

Peter attempts to exclude Mary from spiritual life because she is female.

Jesus responds by describing her transformation into a living spirit.

The two texts therefore approach female spiritual identity differently.

1 Timothy establishes differentiated ecclesial authority.

Thomas 114 emphasizes spiritual transformation beyond bodily identity.

Within the synthesis developed in this book, these are not necessarily contradictory.

The woman may occupy a subordinate ecclesial role while still possessing the capacity for spiritual awakening.

---

12. Submission Does Not Mean Spiritual Death

This distinction must be emphasized.

Submission within a social or ecclesial order does not mean that the woman's spirit is dead.

She can pray.

She can learn.

She can develop wisdom.

She can cultivate virtue.

She can know God.

She can receive the Spirit.

She can become a living spirit.

The earthly hierarchy therefore cannot become an absolute definition of her spiritual identity.

---

13. The Masculine Principle of Authority

Within the symbolic framework of this book, male authority represents the masculine principle.

It involves:

direction, discernment, teaching, responsibility, protection, and order.

But these qualities must be purified.

Authority without wisdom becomes authoritarianism.

Teaching without humility becomes intellectual domination.

Leadership without love becomes tyranny.

The masculine principle must therefore be transformed by the Spirit.

---

14. The Feminine Principle of Receptivity

The woman is instructed to receive teaching.

This represents the feminine principle of receptivity.

But receptivity should not be confused with stupidity.

The learner is receiving in order to become wise.

A woman who learns deeply is not spiritually passive.

She is being formed.

She is acquiring discernment.

She is becoming capable of recognizing truth.

Receptivity is therefore a stage of spiritual development.

---

15. From Reception to Transformation

The spiritual path often begins with reception.

The person hears.

The person listens.

The person learns.

The person receives.

Then the person transforms.

Mary's story follows this pattern.

She begins within a socially subordinate position.

She encounters spiritual truth.

She receives transformation.

She becomes a living spirit.

The woman who begins as learner does not remain spiritually inert.

She becomes transformed.

---

16. Why Must She Learn?

The command to learn is itself significant.

If women were regarded as inherently incapable of spiritual understanding, there would be little reason to command them to learn.

Instead, the text assumes that women should be instructed.

The issue is therefore not whether women possess spiritual minds.

They do.

The issue is how those minds are to function within the particular ecclesial structure being described.

This distinction is essential.

---

17. Teaching and Authority

The passage combines two concepts:

teaching

and

authority.

This suggests that the concern is not simply speaking.

It concerns teaching in a position of authority over men.

A woman could therefore participate in forms of religious instruction without necessarily occupying the particular authoritative office envisioned by this passage, depending upon how the broader New Testament evidence is interpreted.

The precise boundaries have been debated throughout Christian history.

---

18. Women Who Taught Elsewhere in the New Testament

The broader New Testament makes the issue more complicated.

Priscilla, together with Aquila, is associated with instructing Apollos.

Paul commends Phoebe as a servant or minister of the church at Cenchreae.

Women pray and prophesy in Paul's Corinthian correspondence.

These passages demonstrate that women were not simply silent participants in early Christian communities.

The Pastoral restriction therefore needs to be interpreted alongside the wider evidence.

It cannot simply be expanded into:

women may never speak, teach, or exercise any spiritual influence.

---

19. The Order of the Church

The Pastoral Epistles nevertheless envision formal offices and qualifications.

Overseers and deacons are given qualifications.

The community requires recognized leadership.

The author is concerned with preserving doctrine and order.

The restriction concerning women therefore belongs to a larger concern with ecclesial structure.

The question is not merely gender.

It is **who possesses recognized authority to teach and govern the community**.

---

20. The Household and the Church

The Pastoral Epistles connect household order and church order.

A person's ability to manage the household becomes relevant to ecclesial leadership.

This demonstrates how closely the author connects social responsibility with spiritual leadership.

The church is understood as a household.

The household is therefore a model for ecclesial order.

This explains why gender relations become relevant to church leadership.

---

21. Adam, Eve, and the Meaning of Order

The appeal to Adam and Eve also connects ecclesial order with creation.

Adam is formed first.

Eve is formed from Adam.

The author sees significance in this sequence.

The spiritual interpretation developed here can understand the sequence as establishing symbolic polarity:

Adam → direction

Eve → reception

But the ultimate human reality is not Adam alone.

It is Adam and Eve together.

Male and female together constitute humanity.

The two become one flesh.

The spiritual human ultimately transcends the polarity.

---

22. The Fall and Spiritual Discernment

The reference to Eve's deception introduces another theme:

discernment.

The spiritual human must be capable of distinguishing truth from deception.

This is one reason learning is essential.

A person who cannot discern is vulnerable.

The Pastoral author therefore emphasizes order and instruction.

Within the symbolic framework, the feminine must acquire the masculine quality of discernment.

Mary's “becoming male” can therefore be understood as the acquisition of spiritual agency and discernment.

---

23. The Man Is Not Immune to Deception

Yet the biblical story does not portray Adam as morally innocent.

Adam also falls.

The existence of male authority does not mean men are incapable of error.

Indeed, the New Testament repeatedly warns male leaders against pride, greed, false teaching, and abuse.

Therefore authority itself does not guarantee truth.

The male must remain subject to God.

The male leader must also learn.

The masculine principle must remain receptive to divine correction.

---

24. The Integrated Male

This returns us to the Androgynous Spirit.

The male cannot embody only authority.

He must also possess receptivity.

He must listen.

He must learn.

He must accept correction.

He must cultivate humility.

The true spiritual male therefore contains both masculine and feminine dimensions.

He leads.

But he also receives.

He teaches.

But he also learns.

He commands when necessary.

But he obeys God.

This is integrated masculinity.

---

25. The Integrated Female

The woman likewise cannot remain merely receptive.

She must develop discernment.

She must understand Scripture.

She must recognize false teaching.

She must exercise moral responsibility.

She must become spiritually mature.

Thus the command:

“Let a woman learn…”

can be understood as the beginning of her spiritual development.

She receives instruction.

She becomes wise.

She becomes spiritually capable.

The living spirit emerges.

---

26. Silence as Stillness

The language of silence can also be interpreted spiritually.

Before the person can speak wisely, the person must learn to become still.

Silence can represent:

receptivity, humility, attentiveness, and contemplation.

The person who cannot become silent cannot truly listen.

The woman is therefore placed symbolically within a posture of receptivity.

But this is not necessarily her final spiritual state.

The learner becomes wise.

The silent person eventually speaks with wisdom.

The receptive becomes integrated.

---

27. The Apophatic Dimension

This has an important connection with mystical spirituality.

Apophatic contemplation requires silence before the mystery of God.

The human being cannot master God intellectually.

The seeker becomes receptive.

The mind becomes quiet.

The ego becomes still.

The person learns to receive rather than dominate.

Thus the language of quietness can be given a mystical dimension beyond its ecclesial context.

The feminine principle of receptivity becomes a spiritual discipline available to everyone.

---

28. The Kingdom and Authority

The Kingdom ultimately reverses ordinary assumptions about authority.

Jesus teaches that greatness is connected with service.

The greatest becomes servant.

The leader becomes one who gives himself for others.

Thus Christian authority is paradoxical.

The person at the top must descend into service.

The masculine principle reaches its highest expression through sacrifice.

Authority becomes self-giving.

This is the transformation of earthly hierarchy into spiritual leadership.

---

29. The Woman and the Kingdom

Nothing in 1 Timothy 2 requires the conclusion that women are incapable of entering the Kingdom.

The passage concerns teaching and authority.

The wider Christian tradition affirms salvation through faith and participation in Christ.

The woman therefore remains capable of spiritual life.

This is precisely what Thomas 114 dramatizes through Mary.

She begins as the rejected female.

She ends as a living spirit.

---

30. The Difficult Statement About Childbearing

The final portion of the passage states that the woman will be "saved through childbearing" if she continues in faith, love, holiness, and self-control.

This is one of the most difficult statements in the Pastoral Epistles.

It should not be understood crudely as:

women obtain salvation merely by giving birth.

The passage itself qualifies the statement with:

faith, love, holiness, and self-control.

The emphasis therefore remains ethical and spiritual.

Childbearing may represent the woman's ordinary vocation within the household order, but salvation ultimately remains connected with perseverance in Christian virtues.

---

31. Childbearing and the Female Vocation

Within the historical framework of the Pastoral Epistles, motherhood occupies an important place.

The female vocation is connected with:

family, children, household, faithfulness, love, and holiness.

The text therefore affirms ordinary embodied life as a context for spiritual faithfulness.

The woman does not have to escape embodiment to become spiritually alive.

She can encounter God within the responsibilities of embodied life.

---

32. The Spiritual Meaning of Motherhood

Motherhood also carries symbolic significance.

The feminine gives life.

It nurtures.

It protects.

It forms.

It preserves.

The spiritual tradition can therefore see motherhood as an earthly image of generativity.

Yet motherhood is not the entirety of female spiritual identity.

A woman without children does not thereby lack a spirit.

The broader spiritual identity remains deeper than biological reproduction.

---

33. Mary and Motherhood

Mary's presence within Christian tradition further complicates the passage.

Mary is simultaneously:

woman, mother, disciple, and recipient of divine grace.

Her identity cannot be reduced to one category.

She demonstrates the possibility of integrating embodiment and spiritual calling.

This parallels the theology of the living spirit.

The body remains.

The Spirit transforms.

---

34. Submission as a Temporary Order

The earthly order described by the Pastoral writings belongs to embodied existence.

It regulates relationships within the present age.

But the Kingdom transcends the categories through which the earthly order is organized.

The spiritual person therefore participates in earthly responsibilities without making them absolute.

The woman submits within the earthly order.

The Spirit remains free.

The man leads within the earthly order.

The Spirit remains subject to God.

Neither role constitutes the final identity.

---

35. Authority Must Serve Life

The ultimate test of authority is therefore its fruit.

Does authority produce:

life, truth, holiness, love, peace, and spiritual maturity?

Or does it produce:

fear, domination, humiliation, exploitation, and dependency?

The former resembles Christian leadership.

The latter contradicts it.

This principle applies regardless of whether the authority is exercised by a man or woman.

Authority is justified by its purpose and character.

---

36. The Woman's Spiritual Maturity

The woman who learns quietly is therefore not necessarily destined to remain spiritually subordinate forever.

She is being formed.

She is learning.

She is developing discernment.

She is becoming spiritually mature.

The passage establishes an order of teaching.

But the spiritual destination remains **wisdom and life**.

The learner becomes a living spirit.

---

37. The Man's Spiritual Maturity

The man who teaches is not automatically spiritually mature either.

He must be tested.

He must demonstrate character.

He must know the truth.

He must exercise self-control.

He must avoid pride.

He must remain accountable.

The masculine position therefore creates greater responsibility rather than automatic superiority.

The higher the authority, the greater the obligation.

---

38. The Two Orders

The theology can therefore distinguish two orders:

The Ecclesial Order

Concerned with:

- teaching,
- authority,
- offices,
- worship,
- discipline,
- household organization.

The Spiritual Order

Concerned with:

- Spirit,
- transformation,
- holiness,
- knowledge,
- union,
- life,
- the Kingdom.

The first organizes the community.

The second transforms the human being.

The first can differentiate.

The second ultimately unifies.

---

39. The Living Spirit Beyond the Office

A person can possess an office without possessing spiritual life.

A person can lack an office while possessing profound spiritual wisdom.

Therefore ecclesial status must never be confused with spiritual realization.

This is one of the central lessons of Thomas 114.

Peter possesses authority among the disciples.

Yet Peter's judgment of Mary is challenged by Jesus.

Mary occupies the position of the rejected woman.

Yet Jesus reveals her spiritual potential.

The lesson is profound:

earthly status does not determine spiritual destiny.

---

40. The Restoration of the Feminine

1 Timothy 2 therefore becomes part of the larger tension within this book.

The Pastoral order gives the woman a subordinate position within a particular ecclesial framework.

Thomas 114 presents her transformation beyond that bodily and social limitation.

Rather than choosing one text and eliminating the other, this theology distinguishes their levels.

The Pastoral text describes **earthly order**.

Thomas reveals **mystical transformation**.

The woman can inhabit the former while progressing toward the latter.

Conclusion — Learning, Submission, and Spirit

“Let the woman learn in silence” should not be reduced to the proposition that women are intellectually or spiritually inferior.

The passage explicitly commands the woman to **learn**.

It establishes a particular order concerning teaching and authority.

It grounds that order in an interpretation of Adam and Eve.

It places women within a household and ecclesial structure.

But none of this requires the conclusion that women are incapable of spiritual transformation.

The woman learns.

She receives.

She develops wisdom.

She cultivates faith, love, holiness, and self-control.

She becomes spiritually mature.

She becomes a living spirit.

The man likewise bears responsibility for the authority entrusted to him.

He must teach faithfully.

He must lead humbly.

He must serve sacrificially.

He must remain receptive to divine correction.

Both remain accountable to God.

Thus the passage can be integrated into the larger theology:

The woman learns.
The man teaches.
The woman submits within the earthly order.
The man bears responsibility within that order.
Both remain spiritually accountable.
Both can receive the Spirit.
Both can become whole.
Both can enter the Kingdom.

The earthly order differentiates.

The spiritual order transforms.

And beneath both stands the deeper mystery:

male and female in the flesh,
one humanity in creation,
and one living Spirit before God.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 12 — Wives and Submission

Ephesians 5:22–24 and the Husband's Position Within the Household Hierarchy

Ephesians 5:22–24 is one of the clearest New Testament passages concerning the ordering of husband and wife. The text instructs wives to submit to their husbands and describes the husband as the “head” of the wife.

Within the framework of this book, the passage belongs to the **earthly order of embodied relationships** rather than establishing a hierarchy of spiritual worth.

The husband occupies a position of headship.

The wife occupies a position of submission.

But the same passage immediately surrounds this hierarchy with an extraordinary command to the husband:

> “Husbands, love your wives, as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her.”

Consequently, the husband's headship cannot properly be understood as unrestricted domination.

It is **authority under the pattern of sacrificial love**.

---

1. The Household Order

Ephesians 5 presents marriage as an ordered relationship.

The wife is instructed to submit to her husband.

The husband is instructed to love his wife.

The relationship therefore contains differentiated responsibilities.

The passage does not describe husband and wife as interchangeable roles.

Instead, it establishes a hierarchy.

But hierarchy by itself does not determine the spiritual value of those who occupy the different positions.

A servant and a master may occupy different social positions while possessing equal human dignity.

Likewise, within this biblical household framework, husband and wife possess different roles while remaining members of the same humanity and recipients of divine grace.

---

2. “Wives, Submit”

The passage begins:

> “Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord.”

The phrase establishes the wife's relationship to her husband as one of ordered submission.

Within the framework developed in this book, submission represents the **receptive principle**.

The wife accepts the husband's leadership within the household.

She cooperates with his direction.

She recognizes his responsibility.

She does not treat the marriage as a contest for domination.

Submission therefore becomes an orientation toward order.

But the phrase “as to the Lord” establishes an important boundary.

The husband is not God.

The wife's ultimate allegiance remains to the Lord.

---

3. Submission Is Not Worship

This distinction is fundamental.

A Christian wife may submit to her husband.

She does not worship her husband.

She does not treat him as infallible.

She does not regard his desires as automatically identical with God's will.

She remains a moral and spiritual person before God.

Thus:

husband = earthly authority

but:

God = ultimate authority.

This prevents household headship from becoming idolatry.

---

4. The Husband as Head

Ephesians describes the husband as:

> “the head of the wife as Christ is the head of the church.”

The comparison is significant.

The husband is not merely given authority.

His authority is modeled upon Christ's relationship to the Church.

Therefore the husband must ask what Christ-like headship looks like.

Christ's headship is characterized by:

sacrifice, love, service, protection, purification, and self-giving.

The husband's headship must therefore be interpreted through these qualities.

---

5. Headship as Responsibility

The word **head** can easily be interpreted as a license for domination.

But the surrounding passage points toward responsibility.

The husband is responsible for the household.

He is called to love.

He is called to nourish.

He is called to cherish.

He is called to protect.

The greater the authority, the greater the responsibility.

Thus headship is not merely the right to command.

It is the burden of **responsible leadership**.

---

6. Christ as the Pattern

The husband is told:

> "Love your wives, as Christ loved the church and gave himself up for her."

This changes everything.

Christ's authority is demonstrated through self-sacrifice.

He gives rather than merely takes.

He serves rather than merely commands.

He bears suffering for the sake of others.

Therefore Christian headship must be cruciform.

The husband who demands submission while refusing sacrifice has misunderstood the passage.

He wants the authority of Christ without the cross of Christ.

---

7. The Husband's Sacrifice

The husband's first question should therefore not be:

“Does my wife obey me?”

It should be:

“Am I willing to sacrifice myself for the good of my wife?”

This changes the psychology of authority.

The husband cannot use headship simply to obtain comfort.

He must bear responsibility.

He must protect the household.

He must provide where necessary.

He must exercise self-control.

He must sacrifice selfish desires.

He must place the good of the family above his ego.

---

8. The Wife's Submission

The wife's submission likewise has a positive meaning within this framework.

She recognizes the husband's responsibility.

She cooperates with legitimate leadership.

She contributes to household unity.

She does not seek to undermine her husband's responsibility merely to establish her own superiority.

But submission does not require the abandonment of conscience.

If a husband commands something contrary to God, the wife's ultimate obligation remains to God.

Earthly authority is subordinate to divine authority.

---

9. The Two Are One Flesh

Ephesians ultimately connects the household order to Genesis.

The husband and wife become:

> “one flesh.”

This is essential.

The hierarchy does not eliminate union.

The husband remains husband.

The wife remains wife.

Yet they become one household.

The two participate in one life.

This provides another parallel with the mystical principle of Thomas 22:

the two become one without becoming identical.

10. Hierarchy Within Unity

The marriage therefore contains two principles simultaneously:

hierarchy

and

unity.

The husband leads.

The wife submits.

Yet they become one flesh.

This demonstrates that hierarchy and unity are not necessarily opposites within the biblical household model.

The relationship is differentiated in function while unified in life.

The spiritual symbolism developed in this book extends this further:

the masculine and feminine can be distinct while participating in one Spirit.

11. The Masculine Principle

Within the Androgynous Spirit framework, husbandly headship represents the masculine principle of:

- direction,
- responsibility,
- stability,
- protection,
- discipline,
- authority,
- and initiative.

These qualities can be constructive.

But they can also become corrupted.

Authority can become tyranny.

Protection can become possessiveness.

Discipline can become cruelty.

Leadership can become domination.

Therefore the masculine principle requires spiritual transformation.

---

12. The Feminine Principle

The wife's submission represents the feminine principle of:

- receptivity,
- cooperation,
- trust,
- nurture,
- relationality,
- and openness.

These qualities likewise require discernment.

Receptivity without wisdom can become gullibility.

Trust without boundaries can become exploitation.

Submission without moral discernment can become bondage.

Therefore the feminine principle must also be spiritually transformed.

---

13. The Two Principles in Marriage

The ideal household therefore combines:

masculine direction

with

feminine receptivity.

The husband provides direction.

The wife receives and cooperates.

But both influence one another.

The husband listens.

The wife advises.

The husband decides where responsibility requires decision.

The wife contributes wisdom.

The husband protects.

The wife nurtures.

The boundaries are therefore not absolute psychological divisions.

They describe a relational structure.

---

14. The Husband Must Listen

A husband who refuses to listen to his wife is not demonstrating mature headship.

A leader who cannot receive counsel is not wise.

The masculine principle must contain receptivity.

The husband therefore needs the feminine dimension within himself.

He must be capable of listening.

He must receive correction.

He must recognize his own limitations.

He must be willing to reconsider.

This is part of becoming the **integrated male**.

---

15. The Wife Must Exercise Discernment

Likewise, a submissive wife cannot simply surrender all judgment.

She must discern.

She must understand.

She must recognize truth.

She must cultivate wisdom.

Her submission is therefore not intellectual annihilation.

She remains a moral agent.

The feminine principle must contain the masculine dimension of discernment and strength.

This is part of becoming the **integrated female**.

---

16. The Husband's Spiritual Responsibility

Headship creates accountability.

The husband must answer for how he uses authority.

He cannot appeal to Ephesians 5:23 while ignoring Ephesians 5:25.

The command to wives is immediately followed by an enormous command to husbands.

The husband's responsibility is not optional.

He is commanded to love sacrificially.

The text therefore places a heavy burden upon male authority.

---

17. Authority as Service

The Christian understanding of authority is paradoxical.

The leader becomes servant.

The greatest becomes responsible for the weakest.

Power becomes self-giving.

This is why Christ is the model.

The husband should therefore use authority to create conditions in which his wife can flourish.

He should not use authority merely to increase his own power.

True authority produces life.

False authority consumes life.

---

18. The Difference Between Headship and Domination

The distinction can be summarized:

Headship

- responsibility,
- sacrifice,
- protection,

- guidance,
- service,
- accountability.

Domination

- coercion,
- exploitation,
- fear,
- humiliation,
- selfishness,
- control for its own sake.

The first can be understood within the biblical household model.

The second contradicts the Christological pattern established by Ephesians.

---

19. The Wife Is Not the Husband's Property

Submission does not make the wife property.

She remains a person.

She remains an image-bearer.

She remains spiritually accountable.

She remains capable of holiness.

She remains capable of receiving the Spirit.

The husband possesses responsibility over the household relationship, not ownership of another human soul.

This distinction is indispensable.

---

20. The Husband Is Not the Wife's Savior

Likewise, the husband is not the wife's savior.

Christ occupies that role.

The husband can guide.

He can protect.

He can serve.

He can teach.

But he cannot replace God.

This protects the marriage from becoming a form of spiritual idolatry.

The husband is a servant within God's order.

He is not God within the household.

---

21. Submission and Freedom

Christian submission therefore exists within a larger framework of spiritual freedom.

The wife submits to her husband.

But she remains free to worship God.

She remains free to cultivate virtue.

She remains free to seek truth.

She remains responsible for her conscience.

Her earthly role does not erase her spiritual identity.

Thus:

submission in marriage

does not equal

spiritual slavery.

---

22. The Husband and the Flesh

The husband himself remains vulnerable to the flesh.

Authority can stimulate pride.

Sexual power can stimulate lust.

Economic responsibility can stimulate possessiveness.

Social status can stimulate ego.

The husband therefore needs spiritual discipline.

He must continually subordinate his flesh to the Spirit.

The masculine role is not an exemption from transformation.

It creates a greater need for it.

---

23. The Wife and the Flesh

The wife likewise faces her own temptations.

Submission can become resentment.

Dependence can become manipulation.

Receptivity can become passivity.

Desire for security can become fear.

The feminine role therefore also requires spiritual discipline.

Neither sex is automatically righteous.

Both require transformation.

---

24. Marriage as Spiritual Practice

Marriage can therefore function as an arena for spiritual transformation.

The husband learns:

sacrifice.

The wife learns:

trust.

The husband learns:

tenderness.

The wife learns:

cooperation.

The husband learns:

humility.

The wife learns:

receptivity.

Both learn:

patience, forgiveness, self-control, and love.

The household becomes a school of Spirit.

---

25. The Androgynous Marriage

The marriage also provides an embodied image of the Androgynous Human.

The husband represents masculine direction.

The wife represents feminine receptivity.

Yet both eventually discover the qualities of the other.

The husband becomes tender.

The wife becomes strong.

The husband learns to receive.

The wife learns to act.

The two remain distinct.

Yet they become one.

This is the mystery of unity within difference.

---

26. The Pauline and Thomasine Synthesis

The Pauline household order and the Thomasine mystical teaching can therefore be placed in dialogue.

Ephesians says:

ordered relationship.

Thomas says:

make the two one.

Ephesians says:

husband as head.

Thomas says:

male and female become one.

Ephesians says:

wives submit.

Thomas says:

the embodied identity is not the final identity.

The synthesis is therefore:

earthly differentiation + spiritual integration.

---

27. The Kingdom Beyond Household Roles

Household roles belong to earthly existence.

The Kingdom represents the fulfillment toward which the human being moves.

The husband will not remain eternally defined by his household office.

The wife will not remain eternally defined by submission.

The deeper identity is Spirit.

This is consistent with the mystical principle developed throughout this work.

The present age contains differentiated roles.

The Kingdom reveals the deeper unity.

---

28. The Husband as Guide Toward the Kingdom

The husband's highest function is therefore not simply to govern the household.

It is to help orient the household toward God.

He should encourage truth.

Encourage holiness.

Encourage love.

Encourage spiritual practice.

Encourage wisdom.

His leadership should make the household more capable of receiving the Kingdom.

The husband becomes a guide rather than merely a ruler.

---

29. The Wife as Participant in the Kingdom

The wife likewise participates actively in the spiritual destiny of the household.

She cultivates faith.

She nurtures children.

She encourages her husband.

She practices wisdom.

She seeks God.

She becomes spiritually alive.

Her submission does not remove her from the Kingdom.

She travels toward it alongside her husband.

---

30. The Household as a Microcosm

The Christian household can therefore be viewed as a microcosm of the larger spiritual order.

There is:

authority and receptivity,

action and cooperation,

leadership and support,

difference and unity.

When properly ordered, these relationships cooperate rather than compete.

The household becomes an image of harmony.

When corrupted, the same hierarchy becomes domination.

The spiritual task is therefore to transform authority through love.

---

31. The Cross as the Standard

The ultimate standard remains the Cross.

Christ's authority culminates in self-giving.

Therefore the husband's authority must be measured by his willingness to sacrifice.

If he seeks authority but avoids sacrifice, he has abandoned the model.

If he demands submission but refuses love, he has misunderstood headship.

The Cross transforms hierarchy.

It turns power into service.

---

32. The Hidden Feminine Within the Husband

The husband must therefore discover the feminine within himself.

He must become receptive to his wife's wisdom.

He must cultivate compassion.

He must nurture.

He must become capable of vulnerability.

He must be willing to receive love.

The husband who possesses only authority remains spiritually incomplete.

The integrated husband possesses both strength and tenderness.

---

33. The Hidden Masculine Within the Wife

The wife likewise discovers the masculine within herself.

She develops courage.

She develops discernment.

She becomes spiritually responsible.

She learns to act decisively when necessary.

She protects what has been entrusted to her.

She becomes more than passive submission.

The integrated wife possesses both receptivity and strength.

---

34. The Two Become One

The deepest meaning of marriage therefore remains unity.

The husband and wife become one flesh.

Their lives become intertwined.

Their responsibilities become shared.

Their spiritual journey becomes relational.

This does not erase hierarchy.

It places hierarchy within a larger unity.

The husband leads the household.

The wife participates in its life.

Both become one household.

---

35. The Spirit Beyond the Flesh

The final identity of husband and wife remains deeper than their roles.

The husband is not merely:

head.

The wife is not merely:

submission.

The husband is a human being capable of Spirit.

The wife is a human being capable of Spirit.

Both possess a hidden identity beyond social role.

Both are moving toward spiritual wholeness.

Conclusion — Headship Under the Cross

Ephesians 5:22–24 presents a genuine household hierarchy.

The wife submits.

The husband possesses headship.

But the husband is immediately placed under a far greater demand:

love your wife as Christ loved the Church.

This transforms the meaning of authority.

Headship is not permission to dominate.

It is a vocation of responsibility.

The husband must lead through sacrifice.

The wife submits within the earthly order while remaining spiritually accountable to God.

The two remain distinct.

Yet they become one flesh.

Within the theology developed in this book, this earthly hierarchy exists alongside the deeper mystical teaching of Thomas:

the body differentiates,
the household orders,
the Spirit unifies.

The husband therefore becomes the **responsible head**, not the owner of his wife.

The wife becomes the **submissive partner**, not a spiritually inferior being.

And both remain capable of becoming what Thomas calls a **living spirit**.

The final mystery is therefore:

Headship without domination.
Submission without spiritual inferiority.
Authority under sacrifice.
Difference within unity.
Male and female in the flesh.
One Spirit before God.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 13 — The Teaching of Titus

Titus 2:3–5 — Female Conduct, Marriage, Discipline, and the Transmission of Tradition

Titus 2:3–5 provides another important component of the Pastoral vision of male and female life. Unlike 1 Timothy 2, which focuses heavily on learning and ecclesial authority, Titus focuses on **formation within the household**.

Older women are instructed to model reverence and disciplined conduct and to teach younger women how to live faithfully within marriage and family life.

The passage therefore presents the feminine vocation not merely as submission, but as **formation, instruction, discipline, and transmission of wisdom**.

The older woman becomes a teacher of the younger.

The younger woman receives instruction and embodies it within her household.

Tradition therefore passes from one generation to the next through the feminine community.

---

1. The Passage

Titus 2:3–5 instructs older women to be reverent in behavior, avoid destructive speech and excessive indulgence, and become teachers of what is good.

They are then to train younger women:

- to love their husbands,
- to love their children,
- to exercise self-control,
- to remain pure,
- to be devoted to the household,
- to be kind,
- and to live in ordered relationship with their husbands.

The stated purpose is striking:

> "that the word of God may not be reviled."

Female conduct is therefore presented as having consequences beyond the individual woman.

Her behavior becomes a testimony concerning the faith itself.

---

2. The Older Woman as Teacher

This passage complicates any simplistic reading of the Pastoral Epistles as teaching that women must never teach.

Titus explicitly gives older women a teaching role.

Their teaching is directed toward younger women.

They transmit practical and spiritual wisdom.

The woman therefore participates in the preservation of Christian tradition.

Her authority operates within a particular relational sphere.

The older woman teaches the younger.

The experienced instructs the inexperienced.

The mature forms the immature.

Thus female spiritual instruction is clearly present.

---

3. The Transmission of Tradition

The Pastoral vision depends upon continuity.

One generation receives the faith from another.

Older Christians teach younger Christians.

Parents form children.

Married people model fidelity.

Communities preserve moral practices.

Titus places older women within this process of transmission.

The feminine therefore becomes a **guardian of tradition**.

She preserves what she has received.

She teaches what she has learned.

She embodies the faith through conduct.

The transmission of tradition is therefore not exclusively male.

---

4. Wisdom Through Generations

The older woman possesses something the younger woman does not yet possess:

experience.

She has lived through marriage.

She has encountered difficulty.

She has learned discipline.

She has raised children.

She has experienced the consequences of choices.

Her wisdom can therefore be transmitted.

The younger woman does not need to discover everything through trial and error.

She can receive the accumulated wisdom of those who came before her.

This is one of the functions of tradition.

---

5. Female Mentorship

Titus therefore establishes a form of female mentorship.

The older woman teaches the younger.

The relationship is not primarily institutional.

It is personal.

The younger woman learns through observation.

The older woman teaches through example.

Character is transmitted through relationship.

This provides a powerful model of spiritual formation.

The student does not merely memorize rules.

She watches someone who has learned how to embody them.

---

6. Reverent Conduct

The passage begins with the older women being instructed to live in a reverent manner.

The concern is therefore character.

The woman is called toward:

holiness, self-control, dignity, wisdom, and disciplined conduct.

Her spiritual life should become visible.

The faith should produce a recognizable way of living.

Christianity is not merely intellectual assent.

It becomes embodied practice.

---

7. The Tongue

Titus warns against destructive speech.

The older woman is not to become a malicious gossip or slanderer.

Speech has moral consequences.

Words can build.

Words can destroy.

Words can preserve relationships.

Words can fracture communities.

The spiritually mature woman therefore disciplines her speech.

This is especially significant because she is also given a teaching role.

A teacher must possess control over her words.

---

8. Self-Control

Self-control is another central theme.

The Pastoral writings repeatedly emphasize *sōphrosynē*—sound-mindedness, moderation, self-control, or disciplined judgment.

This virtue is not exclusively feminine.

It is a Christian virtue for everyone.

But Titus specifically applies it to women within the household.

The woman is therefore called to govern herself rather than being governed entirely by impulse.

This is part of the transformation from flesh toward Spirit.

---

9. The Feminine and Discipline

Within the symbolic framework developed in this book, the feminine principle is associated with receptivity.

But receptivity requires discipline.

Without discipline, desire can become chaotic.

Emotion can become overwhelming.

Attachment can become possessive.

Nurture can become self-erasure.

The woman therefore needs the masculine principle of structure and discernment.

This is another expression of the Androgynous Spirit.

The feminine becomes whole through integration.

---

10. Love of Husband

Younger women are instructed to love their husbands.

This is significant because the Pastoral order does not describe marriage purely in terms of submission.

It also speaks of **love**.

The wife is not merely commanded to obey.

She is called to cultivate affection, loyalty, and devotion.

Marriage therefore involves more than hierarchy.

It involves relationship.

Submission without love becomes mechanical.

Love transforms submission into relational fidelity.

---

11. Love of Children

The younger woman is also instructed to love her children.

Motherhood is therefore treated as a moral vocation.

The mother provides more than biological reproduction.

She provides:

care, formation, discipline, affection, protection, and instruction.

The household becomes an environment in which character is formed.

The mother's influence therefore extends beyond her immediate actions.

She shapes the next generation.

---

12. The Mother as Spiritual Formator

The mother therefore becomes one of the earliest spiritual teachers.

Before a child can understand theological concepts, the child experiences:

love,

discipline,

forgiveness,

patience,

security,

and moral boundaries.

The mother embodies these realities.

The child learns through imitation.

The household becomes the first school of virtue.

This gives the feminine vocation profound spiritual significance.

---

13. Purity

Titus also emphasizes purity.

Purity here can be understood as moral integrity.

The woman is called to maintain fidelity within marriage and to resist conduct that would undermine the household.

The concern is not merely sexual behavior.

Purity includes intention, speech, loyalty, and conduct.

The woman becomes a guardian of relational integrity.

---

14. Working Within the Household

The passage describes women as being devoted to household responsibilities.

This reflects the social world of the ancient Mediterranean.

The household was not merely a private residence.

It was an economic, social, educational, and religious institution.

Managing the household therefore represented genuine responsibility.

The woman's labor contributed to the stability of the entire family.

The text should therefore not be reduced to the idea that women were merely decorative domestic figures.

Household management was substantial work.

---

15. Kindness

The passage also emphasizes kindness.

This may appear simple, but it is central to Christian character.

Kindness transforms authority.

It transforms marriage.

It transforms motherhood.

It transforms community.

A woman can possess discipline without cruelty.

She can possess authority without domination.

She can possess submission without resentment.

Kindness allows these virtues to coexist.

---

16. Submission to Husbands

The younger women are instructed to submit to their husbands.

This continues the household hierarchy established in Ephesians.

The husband possesses headship.

The wife submits.

But Titus adds another dimension:

the wife must also cultivate love, self-control, purity, kindness, and household faithfulness.

Submission therefore exists within a larger moral framework.

It is not the entirety of the woman's identity.

---

17. Submission and Character

A woman can outwardly submit while inwardly becoming bitter, manipulative, or resentful.

Titus therefore demands more than external compliance.

The woman must cultivate character.

True submission is therefore not simply behavioral.

It involves the transformation of the heart.

The Spirit transforms the inner person.

The household role becomes an expression of spiritual character rather than mere external conformity.

---

18. The Husband's Responsibility

Titus 2 does not provide the same extended discussion of husbandly headship found in Ephesians 5.

But its teaching should not be isolated from the broader New Testament household tradition.

The husband's position is accompanied by responsibility.

He must love.

He must remain faithful.

He must provide stability.

He must not abuse authority.

The woman's submission therefore exists alongside the husband's obligation to live honorably.

---

19. The Woman as Guardian of the Household

The feminine vocation described in Titus can be summarized as **guardianship**.

The woman guards:

the household,

the children,

the marriage,

the moral environment,

the continuity of tradition.

She becomes a guardian of culture.

She preserves what is valuable.

She passes it forward.

This gives female domestic life a broader communal significance.

---

20. The Transmission of Tradition

Tradition survives because someone remembers.

The older woman remembers.

She has received teaching.

She has experienced life.

She passes knowledge forward.

The younger woman receives.

Then she becomes an older woman herself.

The process repeats.

Thus tradition becomes a chain:

older woman → younger woman → family → next generation.

The feminine becomes a major carrier of cultural memory.

---

21. The Hidden Authority of the Older Woman

This creates an interesting form of authority.

The older woman may not possess formal authority over men.

Yet she possesses **formative authority**.

She shapes the women who shape households.

She influences children.

She preserves practices.

She transmits moral knowledge.

Her authority is therefore relational rather than institutional.

It is not insignificant.

It is one of the mechanisms through which a community reproduces itself.

---

22. The Masculine and Feminine Forms of Authority

This allows us to distinguish two forms of authority within the Pastoral framework.

Masculine authority

Often expressed through:

- governance,
- formal teaching,
- household headship,
- public responsibility,
- doctrinal oversight.

Feminine authority

Often expressed through:

- mentorship,
- household formation,
- moral example,
- child formation,
- transmission of tradition,
- relational wisdom.

These forms are differentiated.

Neither is necessarily meaningless.

They operate within different spheres.

---

23. Authority Is Not the Same as Worth

This distinction remains essential.

The fact that one person possesses a particular form of authority does not mean that person possesses greater spiritual worth.

A teacher and student possess different roles.

A parent and child possess different roles.

A husband and wife possess different roles.

But each remains human.

Each possesses spiritual potential.

Each is accountable to God.

The hierarchy of roles cannot become a hierarchy of souls.

---

24. The Feminine and the Living Spirit

The Titus model can therefore be integrated into the doctrine of the living spirit.

The woman begins within embodied life.

She learns discipline.

She develops wisdom.

She loves.

She nurtures.

She teaches.

She transmits tradition.

She submits within the household.

Through these practices, her character is transformed.

She becomes more than the social category assigned to her.

She becomes spiritually mature.

She becomes a living spirit.

---

25. The Masculine and the Living Spirit

The same transformation applies to the man.

He must exercise authority responsibly.

He must cultivate self-control.

He must love.

He must sacrifice.

He must protect.

He must remain faithful.

He must receive wisdom.

He must become humble.

He must likewise become a living spirit.

Neither sex receives spiritual life automatically.

Both must be transformed.

---

26. Titus and the Androgynous Human

The theology of Titus can therefore be integrated with the concept of spiritual androgyny.

The woman develops masculine qualities:

discipline, courage, discernment, responsibility.

The man develops feminine qualities:

compassion, receptivity, nurture, tenderness.

The two become increasingly integrated.

The roles remain differentiated.

The inner human becomes more complete.

This is the hidden androgynous principle operating within the household.

---

27. The Household as a School of Spirit

The Pastoral vision ultimately transforms the household into a school.

The husband teaches through leadership.

The wife teaches through example.

The older teaches the younger.

Parents teach children.

Children learn obedience.

Everyone learns self-control.

Everyone learns responsibility.

The household becomes a place where the fleshly impulses of selfishness are disciplined into virtues.

The family therefore becomes a training ground for spiritual life.

---

28. The Problem of Hypocrisy

The greatest danger is hypocrisy.

A woman may outwardly conform while inwardly remaining dominated by resentment.

A man may outwardly exercise authority while inwardly being dominated by lust or pride.

Neither condition represents spiritual maturity.

The goal is not merely conformity.

It is transformation.

The Spirit must change the heart.

External conduct becomes meaningful when it expresses internal virtue.

---

29. The Word of God and Reputation

Titus gives a practical reason for these instructions:

> "that the word of God may not be reviled."

The behavior of Christians affects how outsiders perceive the faith.

The household therefore becomes a form of witness.

A faithful marriage demonstrates something about Christian teaching.

A disciplined family demonstrates something about Christian virtue.

A corrupt household can bring disgrace upon the faith.

The domestic sphere therefore has theological significance.

---

30. The Female as Witness

The woman becomes a witness through her conduct.

Her faith becomes visible through:

love, discipline, purity, kindness, loyalty, and self-control.

Her life teaches even when she is not occupying a formal teaching office.

She becomes a living testimony.

Her behavior communicates theology.

This is another form of teaching.

---

31. The Difference Between Formal and Embodied Teaching

Formal teaching communicates through words.

Embodied teaching communicates through life.

Titus emphasizes both.

Older women teach younger women.

But they also demonstrate the virtues they teach.

The best teacher therefore embodies the lesson.

A woman who teaches self-control while living without discipline undermines her own message.

A woman who teaches fidelity while remaining faithful becomes an example.

The same principle applies to men.

---

32. The Feminine as Tradition-Bearer

Within this framework, the feminine becomes a **tradition-bearer**.

She carries memory.

She preserves customs.

She forms children.

She teaches younger women.

She protects the continuity of the household.

The feminine therefore becomes a bridge between generations.

The spiritual life of one generation becomes the inheritance of the next.

---

33. Tradition and Discernment

Yet tradition itself requires discernment.

Not everything inherited is necessarily true.

The spiritual person must distinguish:

divine truth

from

human custom.

The older woman therefore does not merely transmit everything she has received.

She must cultivate wisdom.

The living Spirit examines tradition.

It preserves what is good.

It rejects what is corrupt.

It passes forward what leads toward truth.

---

34. The Feminine and Wisdom

The mature woman therefore becomes a figure of wisdom.

She has learned how to distinguish:

desire from love,

obedience from fear,

submission from humiliation,

discipline from cruelty,

tradition from superstition,

and authority from domination.

This is the mature feminine.

It is not passive.

It is discerning.

It is not weak.

It is disciplined.

It is not spiritually inferior.

It is spiritually formed.

---

35. The Younger Woman

The younger woman occupies the position of learner.

She receives instruction from those who have greater experience.

This does not mean permanent intellectual dependence.

It is a stage of formation.

She learns.

She practices.

She gains experience.

Eventually she becomes the older woman.

The cycle continues.

Thus the Pastoral system contains its own mechanism for developing female spiritual maturity.

---

36. The Older Woman

The older woman represents the fulfillment of this process.

She has become:

disciplined, wise, reverent, experienced, and capable of teaching.

Her authority is earned through maturity.

She is not simply older biologically.

She is expected to become spiritually mature.

Age therefore carries responsibility.

The older woman is entrusted with the formation of the next generation.

---

37. The Feminine Vocation as Generative

The feminine vocation in Titus is therefore fundamentally generative.

It produces continuity.

It produces children.

It produces wisdom.

It produces tradition.

It produces stable relationships.

It produces future generations of believers.

The feminine becomes associated with the preservation and transmission of life.

This symbolism complements the masculine principle of direction and governance.

Together they form a social whole.

---

38. The Masculine and Feminine Together

The household therefore requires both:

direction

and

generation.

The husband provides leadership.

The wife provides nurturing and formation.

The older teach the younger.

The younger carry the tradition forward.

The household reproduces itself physically, morally, and spiritually.

This is the social manifestation of complementary principles.

---

39. Beyond the Household

Yet the spiritual identity of the person remains deeper than the household role.

A woman is more than wife.

She is more than mother.

She is more than daughter.

She is more than teacher of younger women.

She is a human being capable of Spirit.

Likewise, the man is more than husband.

He is more than father.

He is more than head of household.

He too is a human being capable of Spirit.

Roles are temporary.

The Spirit is deeper.

---

40. Titus and Thomas

Titus and Thomas can therefore be placed in a productive tension.

Titus emphasizes:

embodied role, discipline, household order, and transmission of tradition.

Thomas emphasizes:

transformation, unity, and spiritual identity beyond bodily categories.

The two operate at different levels.

Titus asks:

How should the embodied woman live?

Thomas asks:

What can the embodied woman become?

The answer to the first is disciplined faithfulness.

The answer to the second is living Spirit.

---

41. The Restoration of the Feminine

The Titus model therefore contributes another dimension to the restoration of the feminine.

The feminine is not restored merely by acquiring masculine authority.

It is also restored through recognizing the spiritual significance of traditionally feminine forms of responsibility.

Motherhood.

Mentorship.

Nurture.

Tradition.

Household formation.

Moral instruction.

These can become genuine spiritual vocations.

The feminine becomes strong through disciplined love.

---

42. The Transformation of the Feminine

Yet Titus does not require the feminine to remain confined to weakness.

The woman is instructed to become disciplined.

She must exercise self-control.

She must become wise.

She must teach.

She must transmit tradition.

She must form others.

The feminine therefore becomes an active force within the household.

Its power is relational and generative.

43. The Final Unity

The mature household brings the masculine and feminine into cooperation.

The husband leads.

The wife supports.

The husband protects.

The wife nurtures.

The older teach.

The younger learn.

Parents form children.

Children inherit tradition.

The entire household becomes ordered toward faithfulness.

The distinction remains.

But the purpose is one.

Conclusion — The Teaching of Titus

Titus 2:3–5 presents a distinctive vision of female discipleship.

The older woman is not spiritually irrelevant.

She is a teacher.

She is a mentor.

She is a guardian of tradition.

She forms younger women.

She helps preserve the moral and spiritual continuity of the household.

The younger woman receives this wisdom and embodies it through love, marriage, motherhood, self-control, purity, kindness, and faithful household conduct.

Submission remains part of the earthly order.

But it exists within a much larger framework of spiritual formation.

The feminine therefore possesses its own sphere of responsibility and influence.

The mature woman becomes a **guardian of life and tradition**.

Yet even this role is not her ultimate identity.

She is more than wife.

She is more than mother.

She is more than daughter.

She is more than teacher.

She is a human being capable of becoming a **living spirit**.

Thus Titus contributes another piece to the larger synthesis:

The man governs.
The woman forms.
The husband leads.
The wife nurtures.
The elder teaches.
The younger learns.
Tradition passes from generation to generation.
And beneath every earthly role stands the deeper human capable of Spirit.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 14 — Submission and Spiritual Formation

Submission is one of the most difficult concepts within the biblical theology developed in this book. Read merely as social subordination, submission can appear to mean little more than obedience to a superior. Read within the broader spiritual framework, however, submission can also be understood as a **discipline of the will**.

The essential distinction is between **submission to God** and submission within an earthly relationship.

The first is ultimate.

The second is derivative.

The first concerns the soul's orientation toward divine reality.

The second concerns the ordering of embodied relationships.

The Christian spiritual tradition therefore provides a way of understanding submission not simply as being placed beneath another person, but as learning to place the ego beneath truth, love, discipline, and God.

---

1. Submission as a Spiritual Discipline

At its deepest level, submission means relinquishing the demand that the self must always have its own way.

The untransformed person says:

“My desire must prevail.”

The spiritually disciplined person learns:

“My desire must be examined.”

This is the beginning of submission.

The person learns to distinguish:

desire from truth,

impulse from wisdom,

pride from dignity,

control from responsibility.

Submission therefore begins internally before it becomes relational.

---

2. The Will and the Ego

Human beings naturally seek control.

We want circumstances to conform to our expectations.

We want other people to recognize our importance.

We want our desires satisfied.

We resist correction.

We resist humiliation.

We resist uncertainty.

The spiritual path challenges this orientation.

The ego must learn that it is not the center of reality.

Submission becomes a method for loosening the ego's grip.

The person learns to say:

“Not everything I want is good for me.”

---

3. Submission to God

The highest form of submission is submission to God.

This is fundamentally different from submission to another human being.

God is the ultimate source of truth and moral authority.

Human beings are not.

Therefore every earthly authority remains subordinate to divine authority.

A husband is not God.

A pastor is not God.

A political ruler is not God.

A parent is not God.

The Christian submits ultimately to God.

Earthly submission is therefore always limited.

---

4. Christ as the Model

Christian theology places Christ at the center of this mystery.

Christ's earthly life is portrayed as one of obedience to the Father.

The New Testament presents him as humbling himself and becoming obedient.

This is not portrayed as weakness.

It is portrayed as spiritual greatness.

The one who possesses authority willingly submits himself to the divine will.

Thus submission and authority are not opposites.

The mature person can possess authority while remaining submitted to something greater.

---

5. Authority Under Authority

This produces an important principle:

legitimate authority must itself be submitted to a higher authority.

The husband submits to God.

The wife submits to God.

The pastor submits to God.

The church submits to God.

The ruler submits to God.

No human being possesses unlimited authority.

The person who claims absolute authority has already violated the structure of Christian submission.

---

6. The Husband's Submission

This principle transforms the concept of male headship.

The husband may occupy a position of authority within the household.

But he remains under divine authority.

His authority is therefore conditional upon righteousness.

He cannot legitimately command evil.

He cannot transform personal preference into divine law.

He cannot use Scripture merely to sanctify selfishness.

He must continually submit his authority to God.

---

7. The Wife's Submission

The wife likewise submits within the household order.

But her ultimate submission is to God.

Therefore her conscience remains spiritually significant.

She cannot simply identify her husband's will with God's will.

If the husband commands something contrary to divine truth, the higher authority remains God.

This creates a hierarchy of authority:

God → moral truth → human relationships.

Human relationships exist beneath the divine order.

---

8. Submission and Conscience

Christian submission therefore does not abolish conscience.

A person remains responsible for their actions.

This is particularly important when discussing religious authority.

The spiritually mature person cannot say:

“I was only obeying another person.”

Moral responsibility remains personal.

Submission therefore requires discernment.

One submits to what is good.

One resists what is evil.

One obeys legitimate authority.

One refuses illegitimate demands.

This is not rebellion against spiritual order.

It is part of spiritual maturity.

---

9. The Transformation of Desire

Submission becomes particularly important because desire is often disordered.

The flesh says:

“I want it now.”

Spiritual discipline says:

“I will examine whether this desire should govern me.”

This is the transformation of desire.

Submission therefore does not necessarily mean suppressing every desire.

It means placing desire under wisdom.

The appetite is no longer sovereign.

The Spirit becomes sovereign.

---

10. Submission and Self-Control

This connects submission with the virtue of self-control emphasized throughout the Pastoral Epistles.

Self-control means that the person does not become the servant of every impulse.

The angry person learns restraint.

The lustful person learns discipline.

The proud person learns humility.

The fearful person learns courage.

The impulsive person learns patience.

Submission therefore becomes an internal ordering of the person.

---

11. The Reordering of the Embodied Person

The body experiences hunger, sexuality, fatigue, fear, pleasure, pain, and desire.

These experiences are real.

But they do not have to become sovereign.

The spiritual person learns to place bodily impulses within a larger order.

The body becomes subordinate to the rational and spiritual dimensions of the person.

This does not require hatred of the body.

It requires **right ordering**.

---

12. Flesh and Spirit

Paul's contrast between flesh and Spirit provides a useful framework.

The flesh represents the human being governed by disordered desire.

The Spirit represents the human being oriented toward God.

Submission therefore means moving:

from impulse toward discipline,

from self-will toward divine will,

from fragmentation toward integration.

This is spiritual formation.

---

13. Submission and the Feminine

Within the particular household order examined in this book, female submission becomes an external expression of a broader spiritual discipline.

The wife learns:

receptivity,

patience,

cooperation,

trust,

humility,

and **self-restraint.**

These qualities can contribute to spiritual formation.

But they do not belong exclusively to women.

The man requires them as well.

---

14. Submission and the Masculine

The husband must also submit.

He submits his:

anger,

sexual desire,

pride,

authority,

ambition,

and **self-interest**

to God.

This is arguably more difficult precisely because he possesses greater authority within the household.

The greater one's power, the greater one's need for self-mastery.

The masculine principle therefore requires submission before it can exercise authority rightly.

---

15. The Paradox of Christian Authority

Christianity creates a paradox:

the person who wishes to lead must first learn to submit.

The husband must submit to God.

The shepherd must submit to Christ.

The teacher must submit to truth.

The ruler must submit to justice.

The strong must submit their strength to love.

Authority becomes legitimate through submission to a higher good.

---

16. Submission and the Cross

The Cross becomes the supreme symbol.

Christ possesses authority.

Yet Christ submits himself.

Christ is exalted.

Yet Christ humbles himself.

Christ rules.

Yet Christ serves.

This reveals the Christian paradox of power:

true authority passes through self-giving.

The husband therefore imitates Christ not by demanding obedience alone, but by accepting responsibility and sacrifice.

---

17. Submission Is Not Humiliation

A crucial distinction must therefore be made.

Submission is not humiliation.

Humiliation attempts to destroy dignity.

Spiritual submission disciplines the ego while preserving dignity.

The purpose is not:

“You are worthless.”

The purpose is:

“You are not the center of reality.”

This distinction is essential.

A person can surrender pride without surrendering human dignity.

---

18. Submission Is Not Abuse

Likewise:

submission is not permission for abuse.

Abuse violates the very principles that make Christian authority legitimate.

Violence, coercion, exploitation, intimidation, and degradation cannot be justified simply by appealing to household hierarchy.

The husband's authority must resemble Christ.

Christ's authority gives himself for others.

It does not consume them.

---

19. The Discipline of Receiving

Submission also teaches the ability to receive.

The ego wants to be the source.

The submitted person learns to receive:

instruction,

correction,

love,

responsibility,

wisdom,

and sometimes hardship.

This is closely connected with the feminine symbolic principle.

The feminine receives.

But spiritual maturity transforms passive reception into **conscious receptivity**.

The person receives deliberately.

The person evaluates what is received.

The person allows truth to transform them.

20. The Discipline of Obedience

Obedience can also become spiritual practice.

The person establishes disciplines:

prayer,

study,

fasting,

service,

sexual restraint,

truthfulness,

patience,

charity,

and forgiveness.

These practices train the will.

The person learns to act according to a chosen spiritual principle rather than immediate impulse.

Submission therefore becomes a method of freedom.

---

21. The Paradox of Freedom

This appears contradictory.

How can submission create freedom?

Because the undisciplined person is not truly free.

A person controlled by anger is not free.

A person controlled by lust is not free.

A person controlled by fear is not free.

A person controlled by pride is not free.

The person who can govern these impulses becomes freer.

Spiritual submission therefore liberates the person from slavery to the lower impulses.

---

22. The Fleshly Master

The flesh can become a master.

Desire commands:

“Consume.”

Anger commands:

“Attack.”

Pride commands:

“Dominate.”

Fear commands:

“Escape.”

Envy commands:

“Possess what the other has.”

The spiritually formed person learns to refuse these commands.

The flesh no longer governs.

The Spirit governs.

---

23. The Living Spirit

This brings submission directly back to the previous chapters.

The living spirit is not simply a spirit that exists.

It is a spirit that has been **ordered**.

The fragmented human becomes integrated.

The will becomes disciplined.

The passions become governed.

The intellect becomes clarified.

The heart becomes oriented toward love.

The body becomes an instrument rather than a tyrant.

This is spiritual formation.

---

24. Submission and Androgyny

The Androgynous Spirit requires both masculine and feminine virtues.

Submission cultivates qualities traditionally associated with the feminine:

receptivity, patience, humility, relationality.

But it also cultivates qualities associated with the masculine:

discipline, courage, self-mastery, responsibility.

The person therefore becomes integrated.

The woman becomes strong through disciplined receptivity.

The man becomes compassionate through disciplined authority.

Both become more complete.

---

25. The Woman's Transformation

Within the household framework, the woman's submission can become an opportunity to cultivate:

patience without weakness,

obedience without loss of conscience,

receptivity without passivity,

love without self-erasure,

humility without humiliation.

The external role becomes a training ground for internal virtue.

The woman learns to transform the meaning of submission.

---

26. The Man's Transformation

The man faces an equally demanding discipline:

authority without tyranny,

strength without cruelty,

leadership without pride,

sexuality without exploitation,

protection without possessiveness,

command without selfishness.

His authority becomes a spiritual burden.

He must submit himself before expecting others to submit to him.

---

27. Submission and Love

The deepest transformation occurs when submission becomes love.

The person no longer obeys merely because of fear.

The person acts for the good of another.

The wife cooperates because she desires household unity.

The husband sacrifices because he loves.

The child obeys because trust has been established.

The disciple follows because truth has been recognized.

Submission becomes relational rather than merely coercive.

---

28. Submission and Trust

Trust is therefore necessary.

One cannot meaningfully submit to a person whom one recognizes as fundamentally malicious.

Biblical household submission presupposes a moral relationship.

The husband is commanded to love.

The wife is commanded to respect and submit.

The relationship therefore depends upon reciprocal virtue.

Where trust is destroyed, the practical meaning of submission becomes profoundly complicated.

Spiritual discernment remains necessary.

29. The Limits of Earthly Authority

No earthly authority is absolute.

This principle prevents submission from becoming idolatry.

The husband has authority.

But God has greater authority.

The pastor has authority.

But God has greater authority.

The church has authority.

But God has greater authority.

The state has authority.

But God has greater authority.

The human being must therefore remain capable of saying:

“This authority has exceeded its proper boundary.”

---

30. Submission and Truth

Truth itself becomes the standard.

The person submits to what is true.

The person rejects what is false.

This is why spiritual discernment must accompany submission.

Blind obedience can become spiritually dangerous.

Disciplined obedience requires understanding.

The mature person asks:

What am I submitting to?

Why?

Is it good?

Is it true?

Does it lead toward God?

---

31. The Restoration of the Will

The ultimate purpose of submission is therefore not destruction of the will.

It is **restoration of the will**.

The disordered will says:

“I want whatever satisfies me.”

The restored will says:

“I desire what is good.”

The will becomes aligned with truth.

It remains a will.

But it becomes ordered.

Freedom and submission become compatible.

---

32. From Self-Will to Divine Will

The spiritual journey can therefore be summarized:

self-will → discipline → discernment → surrender → alignment with divine will.

This is not annihilation of personality.

It is purification.

The person becomes more capable of acting freely because the passions no longer dominate.

Submission becomes a path toward spiritual freedom.

---

33. The Household as Training Ground

The household provides a concrete place where these principles can be practiced.

The husband practices sacrificial leadership.

The wife practices ordered cooperation.

Both practice forgiveness.

Both practice patience.

Both practice self-control.

Both practice fidelity.

Both practice service.

The household becomes a laboratory of spiritual formation.

The roles are embodied.

The virtues are spiritual.

34. The Older and Younger

Titus provides another example.

The younger woman submits herself to instruction from older women.

The older woman exercises authority through teaching.

Yet the older woman also remains accountable to God.

The younger woman learns.

Eventually she becomes the elder.

The hierarchy therefore contains movement.

Roles change with maturity and circumstance.

The ultimate identity remains deeper than the role.

---

35. Submission and Tradition

Tradition itself requires submission.

The disciple submits to the wisdom received from those who came before.

But tradition must also be tested.

The living Spirit does not merely preserve.

It discerns.

It receives what is true.

It rejects what is corrupt.

Submission and discernment therefore work together.

---

36. The Silent Heart

The spiritually submitted person becomes inwardly quiet.

Not because the person has no thoughts.

But because the ego no longer has to dominate every moment.

The person can listen.

The person can contemplate.

The person can receive.

This creates an inner silence in which spiritual perception becomes possible.

The “quietness” associated with the woman in 1 Timothy therefore has a wider mystical significance.

It becomes a discipline available to every human being.

---

37. Submission and Apophatic Contemplation

Apophatic spirituality provides an especially deep analogy.

Before the divine mystery, the intellect becomes silent.

It cannot grasp God as an object.

It relinquishes its demand for mastery.

It becomes receptive.

The contemplative therefore practices a form of submission before transcendence.

The intellect bows.

The ego becomes quiet.

The person receives.

This is spiritual receptivity.

---

38. The Masculine and Feminine Within Contemplation

The contemplative integrates both principles.

The masculine seeks.

The feminine receives.

The masculine asks.

The feminine listens.

The masculine penetrates.

The feminine embraces.

The masculine discerns.

The feminine integrates.

The living spirit requires both.

The seeker ultimately becomes both active and receptive.

---

39. The Submission of Christ

The deepest Christian example remains Christ.

He possesses authority.

He teaches.

He heals.

He commands.

He judges.

Yet he submits himself to the Father's will.

This demonstrates that submission does not contradict authority.

The mature person can simultaneously:

exercise authority

and

submit to God.

This resolves much of the apparent contradiction between hierarchy and humility.

---

40. Authority and Submission as One Movement

Authority and submission therefore belong together.

The husband submits to God and leads the household.

The wife submits within the household and submits ultimately to God.

The pastor submits to Christ and teaches the church.

The disciple submits to truth and becomes capable of spiritual authority.

The pattern is circular:

submission → formation → authority → greater responsibility → deeper submission.

The mature person never outgrows submission to God.

---

41. The Danger of Reversing the Order

Problems arise when the order is reversed.

The husband demands submission from his wife but refuses submission to God.

The pastor demands obedience but refuses correction.

The teacher demands authority but refuses truth.

The ruler demands loyalty but refuses justice.

Such authority becomes corrupted.

The person has placed themselves at the top of the hierarchy.

Christian authority must always remain under God.

---

42. The Spirit Orders the Flesh

The final purpose of spiritual submission is therefore the ordering of the embodied person.

The body experiences desire.

The mind experiences thought.

The emotions experience attraction and aversion.

The will chooses.

The Spirit gives orientation.

The spiritual human does not destroy these dimensions.

The Spirit brings them into harmony.

The body becomes disciplined.

The mind becomes clear.

The emotions become integrated.

The will becomes ordered.

The person becomes whole.

---

43. The Living Spirit and the Kingdom

This transformation prepares the person for the Kingdom.

The Kingdom cannot simply be entered by changing external social status.

It requires inner transformation.

The living spirit is prepared for the Kingdom because it is no longer completely governed by the present age.

The person has learned:

truth over illusion,

love over domination,

discipline over impulse,

Spirit over flesh.

---

44. Submission as Preparation

Submission therefore becomes preparation.

The person learns to relinquish what must be relinquished.

Pride.

Lust.

Resentment.

Selfishness.

Vanity.

The desire for domination.

The fear of surrender.

What remains is a more integrated human being.

The person becomes capable of living according to Spirit.

---

45. The Final Integration

The entire process can now be summarized:

The body provides the field.

The social order provides discipline.

Submission trains the will.

Authority trains responsibility.

Love transforms both.

The Spirit integrates the person.

The Kingdom becomes the destination.

This is the deeper significance of submission within the theology developed here.

Conclusion — Submission as Reordering

Submission cannot be reduced to the proposition that one human being is simply inferior to another.

Within the biblical household framework, submission establishes a social relationship.

But within the deeper spiritual framework, submission becomes a discipline of the will.

The woman learns receptivity.

The man learns humility.

The wife cooperates.

The husband sacrifices.

The disciple obeys truth.

The contemplative becomes silent before God.

The ego relinquishes its demand for absolute control.

The flesh becomes ordered by the Spirit.

The will becomes aligned with the good.

And authority itself becomes subject to a higher authority.

The ultimate hierarchy is therefore not:

man over woman.

It is:

God above humanity.

Human beings remain differentiated in earthly roles, but all remain beneath the divine.

The final movement is therefore:

self-will → submission → formation → integration → spiritual freedom.

The mature human being does not cease to possess a will.

The will becomes purified.

The person does not cease to possess authority.

Authority becomes service.

The woman does not cease to possess dignity.

The man does not cease to possess responsibility.

Both are reordered toward the same end:

the restoration of the embodied human into the living Spirit.

Part III — The Pauline and Pastoral Order

Chapter 15 — The Male as Spiritual Guide

Within the theological framework developed in this book, the male occupies a **guiding position within the earthly order**. This proposition arises from the household and ecclesial patterns examined in Ephesians, 1 Timothy, and Titus.

Yet guidance must be carefully distinguished from domination.

The male is not presented as spiritually superior simply because he is male. Rather, male headship is understood as a **vocation of responsibility**: to lead, protect, teach, discipline, and orient the household toward what is good.

The deeper paradox is that the one who guides must himself remain guided by God.

---

1. The Meaning of Guidance

To guide means to provide direction.

A guide does not merely possess power over another person.

A guide helps another person move toward a destination.

Within Christian theology, that destination is ultimately God.

Therefore the male's highest earthly responsibility is not:

“Make others obey me.”

It is:

“Lead those entrusted to me toward truth, righteousness, and life.”

Authority becomes meaningful when it has a destination.

---

2. Headship as Guidance

Ephesians describes the husband as the head of his wife.

Within this framework, headship can therefore be understood as **ordered guidance**.

The husband assumes responsibility for the direction of the household.

He establishes priorities.

He accepts difficult decisions.

He provides stability.

He protects the household.

He accepts responsibility when things go wrong.

Headship therefore carries a burden that accompanies its authority.

---

3. Guidance Begins With Self-Government

The first person the male must learn to govern is himself.

A man incapable of controlling his anger cannot safely guide others.

A man controlled by lust cannot properly exercise authority over sexual matters.

A man ruled by greed cannot faithfully manage resources.

A man governed by pride cannot receive correction.

Thus spiritual guidance begins with **self-mastery**.

Before the male can become a guide, he must become disciplined.

---

4. The Male Under Authority

Christian headship is never absolute.

The husband remains under God.

His authority is therefore subordinate.

The hierarchy can be represented:

God → moral truth → husband → household responsibility.

The husband is not the highest authority.

He is a steward.

He has been entrusted with responsibility rather than granted unlimited sovereignty.

This distinction protects headship from becoming tyranny.

---

5. Christ as the Model of the Guide

The supreme model is Christ.

Christ guides his disciples.

He teaches.

He corrects.

He commands.

He protects.

He serves.

And ultimately he gives himself for others.

The husband is therefore called to imitate this pattern.

The Christian guide does not merely stand above others.

He places himself **between responsibility and sacrifice**.

---

6. The Shepherd Image

Another biblical image is the shepherd.

The shepherd guides the flock.

He watches.

He protects.

He searches for what is lost.

He provides direction.

The shepherd therefore possesses authority because he possesses responsibility.

This image provides a useful model for understanding male spiritual guidance.

The husband becomes a shepherd of the household.

His task is not to consume the flock.

It is to care for it.

---

7. Guidance and Protection

Protection is one dimension of masculine guidance.

The male is called to protect what has been entrusted to him.

This can include:

physical protection,

economic responsibility,

moral protection,

emotional stability,

and **spiritual vigilance.**

Protection should not become possessiveness.

A man who says:

“I protect you, therefore I own you”

has corrupted protection.

The proper principle is:

“I protect because I am responsible.”

---

8. Guidance and Provision

The earthly guide also accepts responsibility for provision.

The household requires food, shelter, stability, and care.

The male's traditional role as provider can therefore be interpreted as an expression of responsibility rather than mere economic dominance.

Provision is a form of service.

The provider bears burdens so that others can flourish.

This is another expression of sacrificial headship.

---

9. Guidance and Teaching

The male guide must also possess knowledge.

A guide who does not know the path cannot guide others.

Therefore the man must learn Scripture.

He must cultivate wisdom.

He must develop discernment.

He must understand the moral consequences of his decisions.

He cannot simply demand that others obey him.

He must first become someone worth following.

---

10. The Male as Student

This produces an important paradox.

The guide must remain a student.

The teacher must continue learning.

The leader must remain receptive.

The husband must be capable of receiving wisdom from his wife.

The spiritual male therefore possesses both:

authority

and

receptivity.

This is the beginning of the integration of masculine and feminine qualities.

---

11. The Hidden Feminine in the Guide

A spiritually mature male cannot consist solely of masculine traits.

He must also cultivate:

compassion,

tenderness,

receptivity,

patience,

nurture,

and **humility.**

These qualities prevent authority from becoming mechanical.

The guide must know how to listen as well as command.

He must know how to comfort as well as correct.

He must know how to receive as well as give.

---

12. The Guide and the Wife

The husband's relationship with his wife is therefore not simply vertical.

It contains hierarchy, but it also contains communion.

The husband guides.

The wife contributes.

The husband assumes responsibility.

The wife provides counsel.

The husband may make decisions.

The wife remains a person capable of wisdom.

The husband who refuses to listen to his wife is therefore not necessarily demonstrating stronger leadership.

He may simply be demonstrating insecurity.

---

13. Counsel and Authority

Authority does not require ignorance of other people's wisdom.

A wise leader gathers counsel before making important decisions.

The Proverbs repeatedly praise wisdom and counsel.

Therefore a husband can maintain headship while listening carefully to his wife.

Listening does not surrender responsibility.

It can improve responsibility.

The mature guide asks:

“What am I failing to see?”

---

14. Guidance and Discernment

The male guide must distinguish between:

truth and falsehood,

wisdom and foolishness,

discipline and cruelty,

protection and control,

love and possession.

This is why discernment is central to spiritual masculinity.

The guide must be capable of seeing beyond immediate appearances.

He must anticipate consequences.

He must resist impulsive decisions.

He must think beyond himself.

---

15. The Guide and Discipline

A household requires boundaries.

Children need discipline.

Finances require restraint.

Marriage requires fidelity.

Sexuality requires self-control.

Speech requires wisdom.

The male guide therefore participates in establishing boundaries.

But discipline must have a purpose.

Its purpose is formation.

The goal is not punishment for its own sake.

The goal is to cultivate maturity.

---

16. Discipline Without Cruelty

A man can become so concerned with authority that discipline turns into domination.

This is a distortion.

Biblical discipline should seek restoration.

Correction should aim at wisdom.

Punishment should not become revenge.

The guide must therefore distinguish:

correction

from

humiliation.

The first can form character.

The second can destroy it.

---

17. The Guide as Servant

Christian leadership is therefore paradoxical.

The guide is the servant.

The one with authority bears the greater burden.

The husband should therefore ask:

What can I do for my household?

rather than:

What can my household do for me?

The second question is self-centered.

The first expresses Christian headship.

---

18. The Male and Sacrifice

The highest form of masculine authority is therefore sacrificial.

The man gives:

time,

energy,

resources,

protection,

patience,

and sometimes personal comfort.

He sacrifices for the flourishing of others.

This transforms authority into love.

The guide does not merely command people toward the good.

He walks toward the good first.

---

19. The Male as Example

People follow examples more readily than commands.

Therefore the male guide must embody the virtues he expects from others.

If he expects honesty, he must be honest.

If he expects discipline, he must be disciplined.

If he expects fidelity, he must be faithful.

If he expects prayer, he must pray.

If he expects humility, he must practice humility.

His life becomes a form of teaching.

---

20. The Spiritual Guide and Hypocrisy

Hypocrisy destroys authority.

The man who preaches discipline while living without discipline loses moral credibility.

The man who demands fidelity while being unfaithful destroys trust.

The man who demands submission while behaving selfishly turns headship into oppression.

The spiritual guide therefore has a higher obligation to examine himself.

Authority magnifies hypocrisy.

---

21. The Guide and Repentance

A genuine guide must therefore know how to repent.

When he makes a mistake, he admits it.

When he harms someone, he seeks reconciliation.

When he receives correction, he listens.

When he discovers that he is wrong, he changes.

This does not weaken authority.

It demonstrates moral strength.

A leader who can never admit error is not demonstrating spiritual maturity.

---

22. The Guide and the Living Spirit

The concept of the living spirit provides the deeper foundation.

The male guide is not merely a social role.

He is an embodied person undergoing spiritual transformation.

His body is male.

His social position is masculine.

But his deepest identity is Spirit.

Therefore his authority must be transformed by spiritual consciousness.

The flesh says:

“I possess power.”

The Spirit says:

“I have been entrusted with responsibility.”

---

23. The Fleshly Male

The fleshly male seeks domination.

He wants recognition.

He wants obedience.

He wants sexual possession.

He wants status.

He wants control.

His masculinity becomes an ego project.

This is precisely what spiritual formation must overcome.

Biological maleness does not automatically produce spiritual masculinity.

---

24. The Spiritual Male

The spiritual male is different.

He possesses strength without cruelty.

Authority without arrogance.

Sexuality without exploitation.

Confidence without pride.

Discipline without rigidity.

Leadership without domination.

Protection without possessiveness.

This is the masculine principle transformed by Spirit.

---

25. The Female and the Guide

The woman can therefore encounter the spiritual male not primarily as a threat but as a source of ordered guidance.

Within the household hierarchy, she recognizes his responsibility.

But because his authority is ordered toward God, his leadership should create stability rather than fear.

His goal is not to make her smaller.

His goal is to help the household become stronger.

---

26. The Wife's Contribution

The wife is not merely a recipient of direction.

She contributes:

wisdom,

counsel,

emotional insight,

nurture,

relational awareness,

and **household knowledge.**

The husband guides the household while receiving the wife's contribution.

This allows hierarchy and cooperation to coexist.

---

27. The Guide and the Feminine Principle

The mature male therefore incorporates the feminine principle internally.

He becomes receptive.

He listens.

He nurtures.

He comforts.

He protects without possessing.

He receives counsel.

He allows himself to be corrected.

The masculine and feminine therefore become integrated within the guide himself.

This is the deeper meaning of spiritual androgyny.

---

28. The Guide and the Kingdom

The husband's earthly authority is temporary.

The Kingdom is permanent.

Therefore he must never confuse his earthly office with his ultimate identity.

He is husband.

He may be father.

He may be leader.

But ultimately he is a human being before God.

His authority will pass.

His responsibility will end.

His Spirit remains oriented toward the Kingdom.

---

29. Guidance Toward the Kingdom

The highest purpose of household leadership is therefore spiritual orientation.

The husband should encourage:

truth,

prayer,

virtue,

forgiveness,

faithfulness,

discipline,

and **love.**

He should help create an environment in which the household can seek God.

The household becomes a small community oriented toward the Kingdom.

---

30. The Guide Cannot Save Another

This boundary must remain clear.

The husband can guide.

He cannot save.

The husband can teach.

He cannot transform another person's Spirit.

The husband can encourage.

He cannot force genuine spiritual awakening.

The ultimate work belongs to God.

Thus the guide remains a servant.

---

31. Coercion and Spirituality

Spiritual transformation cannot be manufactured through coercion.

A person can be forced to perform an external behavior.

But genuine faith, love, wisdom, and spiritual awakening cannot simply be commanded into existence.

The male guide therefore has to respect the interior life of those entrusted to him.

He can teach.

He can model.

He can encourage.

But the Spirit must transform.

32. The Guide as Gardener

A useful metaphor is the gardener.

The gardener prepares the soil.

Provides water.

Protects the plant.

Removes harmful growth.

Creates favorable conditions.

But the gardener does not manufacture life.

Life grows.

Likewise, the spiritual guide prepares conditions for flourishing.

God gives life.

---

33. The Guide and the Household

The household becomes the primary field of masculine responsibility.

The husband establishes order.

He helps provide stability.

He protects the family.

He cultivates an environment where virtue can grow.

The wife participates in this work.

Children are formed within it.

The entire household becomes a cooperative spiritual project.

---

34. The Guide and the Children

A father has a particularly important role in teaching children.

He models:

discipline,

courage,

responsibility,

honesty,

service,

and **faith.**

Children learn masculinity partly through observing how their father exercises power.

If power is cruel, they learn cruelty.

If power is compassionate, they learn responsible strength.

The father's conduct therefore becomes formative.

---

35. The Mother as Complementary Guide

This does not eliminate the mother's formative role.

The mother teaches through:

nurture,

wisdom,

compassion,

discipline,

and **example.**

The two parents therefore guide differently while sharing responsibility for formation.

The masculine and feminine cooperate in raising the next generation.

---

36. The Guide and Tradition

The male also participates in preserving tradition.

He teaches Scripture.

He preserves household practices.

He transmits moral principles.

He protects the community from destructive influences.

The woman likewise transmits tradition through her own sphere.

The two become complementary guardians of memory.

---

37. The Guide and Truth

The guide must ultimately serve truth rather than personal preference.

This means that he must be willing to say:

“I was wrong.”

He must be willing to change.

He must not reinterpret divine teaching merely to justify himself.

The guide who makes himself the measure of truth has ceased to be a guide.

He has become an idol.

---

38. The Guide and Humility

Humility therefore becomes one of the highest masculine virtues.

The man can possess authority while remaining humble.

He can lead while listening.

He can command while serving.

He can be strong while admitting weakness.

He can protect while remaining gentle.

This is not contradiction.

It is integration.

---

39. The Androgynous Guide

The fully integrated male therefore embodies both principles:

Masculine

direction, strength, authority, initiative, protection.

Feminine

receptivity, compassion, nurture, patience, tenderness.

Neither destroys the other.

The masculine gives structure.

The feminine gives relational depth.

The result is the integrated human.

---

40. From Male to Living Spirit

The movement established throughout this book can now be applied to the male:

biological male → social male → responsible male → spiritually integrated male → living spirit.

The first is given by embodiment.

The second is formed by culture.

The third is formed by responsibility.

The fourth is formed by integration.

The fifth is the deeper spiritual identity.

Thus the male does not simply become a better man.

He becomes something deeper:

a living spirit.

---

41. The Woman's Parallel Journey

The woman's transformation follows a corresponding pattern:

biological female → social female → responsible woman → spiritually integrated woman → living spirit.

The paths differ in their earthly roles.

But they converge spiritually.

Both become integrated.

Both become capable of Spirit.

Both move toward the Kingdom.

---

42. The Final Purpose of Guidance

The greatest guide eventually teaches others how to stand.

He does not create permanent dependence.

He forms maturity.

The purpose of parenting is eventually independence.

The purpose of teaching is understanding.

The purpose of spiritual guidance is communion with God.

The guide therefore works toward his own decreasing necessity.

He points beyond himself.

Conclusion — The Male as Guide

Within the Pauline and Pastoral framework developed in this book, the male occupies a guiding position within the earthly household order.

He is called to:

lead,

protect,

provide,

teach,

discipline,

serve,

and **sacrifice.**

But none of these responsibilities establishes automatic spiritual superiority.

The male is himself subject to transformation.

He must submit to God.

He must govern himself.

He must receive wisdom.

He must cultivate compassion.

He must sacrifice his ego.

He must use authority for life rather than domination.

His headship is therefore best understood as **stewardship**.

He is entrusted with responsibility.

He is not given ownership of another person's soul.

The true spiritual male therefore becomes:

strong without cruelty,
authoritative without tyranny,
protective without possession,
disciplined without rigidity,
and humble without weakness.

He guides because he has first learned to be guided.

He leads because he has first learned to submit.

He possesses authority because he accepts responsibility.

And beneath the earthly role of husband, father, and guide remains the deeper identity explored throughout this book:

the living Spirit moving toward the Kingdom.

Part IV — The Feminine Spirit

Chapter 16 — The Feminine Hidden Within the Male

The preceding chapters examined the feminine within the earthly order: the woman as wife, learner, mother, teacher, and bearer of tradition. The present chapter turns the question inward.

If the woman must discover the masculine principle in order to become spiritually integrated, then the man must likewise discover the feminine principle within himself.

The spiritually complete male is therefore not a man who has eliminated everything feminine.

He is a man who has **reconciled the feminine within himself**.

This proposition provides an important key to the doctrine of the Androgynous Spirit.

The male remains male in the flesh.

But the deepest spiritual human cannot be reduced to biological masculinity.

---

1. The Problem of the Incomplete Male

The fleshly male can easily mistake biological sex for spiritual completeness.

He sees himself as:

male, therefore strong;

male, therefore authoritative;

male, therefore rational;

male, therefore spiritually superior.

But biological maleness guarantees none of these qualities.

A man can be cowardly.

He can be irrational.

He can be emotionally unstable.

He can be dominated by lust.

He can be ruled by pride.

He can misuse authority.

Therefore the male body cannot itself constitute spiritual masculinity.

Spiritual masculinity must be cultivated.

---

2. The Masculine Alone Is Insufficient

A purely masculine identity, understood symbolically, emphasizes:

strength, direction, authority, initiative, independence, and action.

These qualities are valuable.

But isolated from the feminine, they can become distorted.

Strength can become aggression.

Authority can become tyranny.

Independence can become isolation.

Initiative can become recklessness.

Reason can become coldness.

Discipline can become rigidity.

The masculine therefore requires integration.

---

3. The Hidden Feminine

The feminine principle introduces another set of qualities:

receptivity, compassion, tenderness, nurture, relationality, patience, empathy, and openness.

These qualities do not make a man less male.

They make his masculinity more complete.

The man who can protect but cannot nurture is incomplete.

The man who can command but cannot listen is incomplete.

The man who can fight but cannot comfort is incomplete.

The man who can speak but cannot receive correction is incomplete.

The feminine therefore restores dimensions of humanity that masculine identification can suppress.

---

4. The Male as Both Active and Receptive

The spiritually mature male must therefore possess both:

active strength

and

receptive openness.

He acts.

But he also listens.

He leads.

But he also learns.

He protects.

But he also nurtures.

He teaches.

But he also receives instruction.

He commands when necessary.

But he submits himself to God.

This is not contradiction.

It is integration.

---

5. The Feminine Is Not Biological Femaleness

The term “feminine” must be carefully distinguished from biological female sex.

The feminine principle is symbolic.

It refers to qualities and modes of relationship traditionally associated with women.

A man can possess them.

A woman can possess them.

Likewise, masculine qualities are not biologically exclusive to men.

The spiritual human transcends rigid psychological compartmentalization.

The male remains male.

But his interior life can contain feminine dimensions.

---

6. Receptivity

Perhaps the most important feminine quality within the male is **receptivity**.

The immature man believes that he must always act.

The mature man learns when to receive.

He receives:

wisdom,

correction,

love,

counsel,

beauty,

truth,

and **grace.**

He understands that not everything valuable can be conquered.

Some things must be received.

---

7. The Male Before God

This is particularly important in spiritual life.

God cannot be conquered.

God cannot be possessed as an object.

The seeker cannot force divine reality into submission.

Before God, the masculine ego must become receptive.

The man must learn to listen.

He must become quiet.

He must pray.

He must contemplate.

He must receive.

Thus the feminine principle becomes a necessary spiritual discipline for the male.

---

8. Humility

Receptivity produces humility.

The man recognizes:

I do not know everything.

I cannot control everything.

I cannot save myself through strength alone.

I need truth.

I need others.

I need God.

This recognition does not diminish masculinity.

It purifies it.

The man becomes strong enough to admit dependence upon what is greater than himself.

---

9. Compassion

The feminine within the male also manifests as compassion.

Compassion means allowing another person's suffering to affect you.

The hardened male attempts to remain untouched.

The spiritually integrated male allows himself to care.

He does not merely solve problems.

He accompanies people through suffering.

He does not merely protect bodies.

He protects hearts.

He does not merely establish order.

He cultivates life.

---

10. Tenderness

Tenderness is another dimension frequently excluded from distorted masculinity.

The man may believe that tenderness makes him weak.

But tenderness requires control of strength.

The violent person cannot be tender because he cannot govern his power.

The spiritually mature man can possess enormous strength while choosing gentleness.

Tenderness is therefore not the absence of strength.

It is **strength under discipline**.

---

11. Nurture

The male can also nurture.

He can raise children.

He can encourage his wife.

He can teach.

He can cultivate spiritual growth.

He can create safety.

He can preserve relationships.

Nurture is therefore not the exclusive property of women.

The father who nurtures his child is exercising the feminine principle without ceasing to be male.

---

12. The Male as Father

Fatherhood itself demonstrates the integration of masculine and feminine dimensions.

The father exercises authority.

But he also nurtures.

He disciplines.

But he also comforts.

He protects.

But he also embraces.

He teaches.

But he also listens.

Fatherhood therefore becomes one of the clearest earthly expressions of integrated masculinity.

---

13. Authority and Receptivity

The male guide discussed in Chapter 15 must therefore possess the feminine principle.

A guide who cannot receive becomes authoritarian.

A guide who cannot listen becomes blind.

A guide who cannot empathize becomes cruel.

A guide who cannot nurture becomes merely administrative.

The feminine humanizes authority.

It turns command into relationship.

It turns governance into care.

---

14. The Husband and the Feminine

This is especially important within marriage.

The husband possesses headship according to the Pauline household framework.

But headship requires love.

Love requires receptivity.

The husband must know his wife.

He must listen to her.

He must understand her needs.

He must recognize her fears.

He must receive her counsel.

He must care about her interior life.

This is the feminine within masculine headship.

---

15. The Masculine Without the Feminine

A man who rejects everything feminine within himself may become trapped in a narrow identity.

He may believe:

emotion is weakness,

tenderness is weakness,

receptivity is weakness,

dependence is weakness.

He therefore suppresses parts of himself.

The result is fragmentation.

The Androgynous Spirit rejects this fragmentation.

The complete human does not need to destroy half of humanity's qualities to become strong.

He integrates them.

---

16. The Feminine Without the Masculine

The opposite problem also exists.

The feminine principle without masculine integration can become:

passivity,

indecision,

dependency,

lack of boundaries,

and **inability to act.**

The feminine therefore requires masculine strength.

This is why the theology does not glorify one principle over the other.

Both require each other.

---

17. The Two Principles as Complementary

The masculine can be represented as:

direction.

The feminine as:

receptivity.

The masculine says:

“I will act.”

The feminine says:

“I will receive.”

The integrated human says:

“I will know when to act and when to receive.”

This is wisdom.

---

18. The Spiritual Male and Prayer

Prayer reveals the integration clearly.

The man approaches God.

He speaks.

He asks.

He seeks.

This is active.

But then he becomes silent.

He listens.

He receives.

He surrenders.

This is receptive.

Prayer therefore contains both masculine and feminine dimensions.

The spiritually mature male possesses both.

---

19. The Feminine Within Contemplation

Contemplative spirituality especially emphasizes receptivity.

The contemplative does not attempt to seize God intellectually.

The mind becomes quiet.

The ego becomes transparent.

The person receives the mystery.

This resembles the feminine principle.

The male who enters contemplation therefore discovers a dimension of himself that ordinary masculine social conditioning may have suppressed.

---

20. The Feminine and Apophatic Theology

Apophatic theology takes this even further.

God exceeds conceptual mastery.

Therefore the seeker must relinquish the demand to possess complete intellectual control.

The seeker says:

God is greater than my concepts.

This is profound humility.

The masculine ego is dethroned.

The receptive human remains.

The person becomes open to mystery.

---

21. The Inner Marriage

The reconciliation of masculine and feminine within the individual can be described as an **inner marriage**.

The masculine and feminine cease competing.

They cooperate.

The masculine provides direction.

The feminine provides depth.

The masculine establishes boundaries.

The feminine creates relationship.

The masculine acts.

The feminine receives.

The integrated human possesses both.

---

22. Thomas 22

Thomas 22 provides the central mystical formulation:

> "Make the two one."

This can be interpreted internally.

The two are not merely husband and wife.

They are also dimensions within the human being.

The male must make the masculine and feminine one within himself.

The woman must make the masculine and feminine one within herself.

The divided human becomes integrated.

The living spirit emerges.

---

23. Thomas 114 Revisited

Thomas 114 can now be reconsidered.

Mary is “made male.”

Within the symbolic interpretation developed here, she acquires masculine spiritual agency.

But if Thomas 22 is the final key, she does not simply become permanently masculine.

She becomes integrated.

Likewise, the male disciple must acquire the feminine.

The transformation therefore runs in both directions.

The feminine discovers the masculine.

The masculine discovers the feminine.

Both move toward unity.

---

24. The Male's “Female” Spirit

The phrase “feminine within the male” should therefore not be interpreted biologically.

It means that the man's spirit possesses qualities that cannot be classified exclusively as masculine.

His capacity for:

love,

receptivity,

care,

beauty,

tenderness,

and **compassion**

belongs to his humanity.

The man does not become biologically female.

His interior humanity becomes more complete.

---

25. The False Fear of Feminization

A spiritually insecure man may fear becoming feminine.

He may believe that compassion will weaken him.

But compassion does not weaken strength.

It gives strength a purpose.

He may fear receptivity.

But receptivity makes wisdom possible.

He may fear tenderness.

But tenderness allows strength to protect without destroying.

He may fear humility.

But humility prevents authority from becoming tyranny.

The feminine therefore does not emasculate the male.

It **humanizes** him.

---

26. The True Masculine

The true masculine is therefore not defined by domination.

It is defined by **ordered strength**.

The mature male possesses power but does not need to prove it constantly.

He possesses authority but does not abuse it.

He possesses sexuality but does not become ruled by lust.

He possesses intelligence but remains teachable.

He possesses independence but remains capable of love.

This is integrated masculinity.

---

27. Strength and Gentleness

The ideal male can therefore hold apparent opposites:

strength and gentleness,

authority and humility,

independence and dependence,

discipline and compassion,

courage and tenderness.

These are not contradictions once the person is integrated.

Strength protects gentleness.

Gentleness humanizes strength.

Authority creates order.

Humility prevents abuse.

---

28. The Male as Protector of Life

The masculine principle reaches its highest form when it becomes protective of life.

The male does not use strength to consume.

He uses strength to preserve.

He protects the vulnerable.

He protects his family.

He protects truth.

He protects what is good.

This is masculine strength transformed into service.

The feminine principle complements it by nurturing what has been protected.

---

29. Protection and Nurture

Protection and nurture therefore form a natural pair.

Protection establishes safety.

Nurture allows life to flourish within safety.

The masculine and feminine principles cooperate.

The male protects.

The feminine nurtures.

But the male can also nurture.

The female can also protect.

The principles are complementary rather than exclusive.

---

30. The Spiritual Father

The spiritually mature father therefore becomes both:

guardian

and

nurturer.

He establishes boundaries.

He also provides affection.

He disciplines.

He also forgives.

He corrects.

He also comforts.

He teaches.

He also listens.

This is the father as integrated human.

---

31. The Male Disciple

The male disciple must therefore learn from Christ.

He learns strength.

He learns compassion.

He learns authority.

He learns service.

He learns courage.

He learns humility.

He learns to confront evil.

He learns to wash feet.

The masculine and feminine dimensions coexist within the same spiritual exemplar.

---

32. Christ and Integrated Humanity

Christ's presentation in the New Testament provides a particularly powerful image of integrated humanity.

He is portrayed as authoritative.

Yet compassionate.

He confronts hypocrisy.

Yet welcomes sinners.

He speaks with authority.

Yet serves others.

He is courageous.

Yet weeps.

He commands.

Yet submits to the Father.

The masculine and feminine symbolic principles therefore coexist within the Christological image.

---

33. The Spirit Beyond Gender

Ultimately, however, the Spirit exceeds masculine and feminine symbolism altogether.

The categories are useful because human beings think through symbols.

But the divine Spirit cannot be reduced to either.

The deepest identity therefore lies beyond the binary.

The masculine and feminine are integrated and then transcended.

The living spirit is neither imprisoned within masculinity nor femininity.

---

34. The Male as Living Spirit

The male's journey can therefore be summarized:

male body

→ masculine social identity

→ responsible authority

→ receptivity to the feminine

→ integration

→ living Spirit.

The feminine is not a threat to the male.

It is part of the path toward spiritual completeness.

---

35. The Feminine as Gift

The feminine hidden within the male can therefore be understood as a gift.

It gives him:

depth,

compassion,

receptivity,

relational intelligence,

tenderness,

and **humility.**

These qualities prevent his strength from becoming destructive.

They make his authority capable of love.

---

36. The Masculine as Gift

Likewise, the masculine hidden within the female gives:

strength,

direction,

discernment,

courage,

boundaries,

and **initiative.**

Neither sex possesses the entirety of human possibility.

The complete human integrates the gifts symbolized by both.

---

37. The Inner Restoration

The restoration of the feminine within the male therefore heals a division.

The man no longer needs to reject tenderness to prove masculinity.

He no longer needs to suppress emotion to demonstrate strength.

He no longer needs to dominate to demonstrate authority.

He can become whole.

His masculinity becomes secure enough to contain vulnerability.

38. Vulnerability as Strength

Vulnerability is particularly important.

The insecure man hides weakness.

The mature man can acknowledge it.

He can say:

“I do not know.”

“I was wrong.”

“I am hurt.”

“I need help.”

“I love you.”

Such statements do not destroy masculinity.

They demonstrate freedom from the need to maintain an artificial image of invulnerability.

39. The Male and Love

Love is perhaps the highest integration of masculine and feminine qualities.

Love acts.

Love gives.

Love protects.

But love also receives.

Love listens.

Love allows itself to be affected.

The complete male therefore becomes capable of both giving and receiving love.

This is the union of masculine initiative and feminine receptivity.

---

40. The Living Spirit as Integrated Human

The living spirit is therefore the human who no longer needs to fragment himself.

He does not have to choose:

strength or tenderness.

He can possess both.

He does not have to choose:

authority or humility.

He can possess both.

He does not have to choose:

independence or relationship.

He can possess both.

He becomes internally whole.

---

41. The Kingdom

The Kingdom represents the completion of this integration.

The divided human becomes whole.

The masculine and feminine are reconciled.

The flesh no longer defines the entire person.

The Spirit becomes primary.

The person enters a mode of existence in which division no longer has ultimate authority.

The Kingdom is therefore the fulfillment of the Androgynous Spirit.

---

42. The Male and the Woman

This transformation also changes the relationship between man and woman.

The man no longer approaches the woman merely as an opposite.

He recognizes qualities within her that already exist within himself.

The woman is therefore not an alien category.

She reflects part of his own humanity.

Likewise, she can recognize masculine qualities within herself.

The two become capable of deeper mutual recognition.

---

43. Beyond Domination

This recognition undermines domination.

If the male contains the feminine within himself, he cannot honestly regard femininity as inherently inferior.

The qualities he might despise in women are also dimensions of his own humanity.

Likewise, the woman does not need to despise masculinity.

She possesses masculine capacities within herself.

The two become less divided.

---

44. The Restoration of the Male

The restoration of the feminine therefore restores the male himself.

He becomes:

strong but gentle,

authoritative but receptive,

disciplined but compassionate,

independent but relational,

protective but nurturing.

He becomes capable of exercising headship without domination.

This is the mature male.

---

45. The Final Reconciliation

The ultimate movement is:

masculine + feminine → integrated human → living Spirit.

The male does not cease to be male.

The female does not cease to be female.

But both discover that their deepest identity transcends the distinction.

This is the mystery of the hidden feminine.

It was never truly foreign to the male.

It was hidden within his humanity all along.

Conclusion — The Feminine Hidden Within the Male

The spiritually complete male is not the man who has eliminated every feminine quality.

He is the man who has reconciled them.

He can be strong without being cruel.

He can lead without dominating.

He can protect without possessing.

He can discipline without humiliating.

He can command while remaining humble.

He can act while remaining receptive.

He can possess authority while remaining under God.

The feminine within him gives depth to his strength.

It gives compassion to his authority.

It gives tenderness to his protection.

It gives receptivity to his knowledge.

And it gives humility to his leadership.

Thus the male's spiritual transformation is not simply:

male → stronger male.

It is:

male → integrated human → living Spirit.

The masculine and feminine become one within the person.

The divided human becomes whole.

And the whole human becomes capable of the final identity toward which this book has continually pointed:

the living Spirit.

Part IV — The Feminine Spirit

Chapter 17 — The Feminine Desiring the Male

Female desire for union with the male can be understood on several levels simultaneously: **bodily, relational, symbolic, and spiritual**.

At the bodily level, male and female are differentiated forms of embodied humanity whose union is associated with sexuality and reproduction.

At the relational level, desire reaches beyond the body toward companionship, intimacy, fidelity, mutual recognition, and the creation of a shared life.

At the symbolic level, the feminine seeks union with the masculine as one half of a greater human polarity.

At the spiritual level, the desire for union points beyond biological sex toward the restoration of the divided human into wholeness.

The central proposition of this chapter is therefore:

The feminine desires the male not merely because of the body, but because union expresses a deeper movement from separation toward communion.

---

1. Desire as Movement

Desire is fundamentally movement.

The desiring person recognizes something outside the present self and moves toward it.

The feminine sees the masculine.

The masculine sees the feminine.

Each encounters an other.

The other possesses qualities the self does not completely embody.

Desire therefore begins with difference.

But desire seeks relationship.

The movement is:

difference → attraction → relationship → union.

---

2. Bodily Desire

At the most immediate level, female desire for the male is bodily.

The embodied woman experiences attraction.

The body responds to another body.

Sexual differentiation creates the possibility of sexual complementarity.

This dimension should not be treated as spiritually meaningless.

Embodiment belongs to human existence.

The body is part of the present condition.

Yet bodily desire is not the whole meaning of desire.

It can become an opening toward deeper forms of relationship.

---

3. Desire Beyond Sexuality

A woman can desire a man without desiring merely sexual contact.

She can desire:

his presence,

his companionship,

his protection,

his affection,

his wisdom,

his strength,

his loyalty,

and **his love.**

Thus desire becomes relational.

The woman does not merely desire a body.

She desires a person.

This distinction transforms sexuality from consumption into communion.

---

4. The Desire to Be Known

One of the deepest dimensions of relational desire is the desire to be known.

The woman desires a man who sees her.

Not merely her body.

Not merely her social role.

Not merely her usefulness.

But her interior person.

To be known without being reduced is a profound form of intimacy.

The feminine seeks recognition.

It desires the experience:

“You see me, and you do not reject me.”

5. The Desire to Know

The movement is reciprocal.

The woman also desires to know the man.

She wants to understand his thoughts.

His fears.

His hopes.

His strengths.

His weaknesses.

His history.

His aspirations.

Union therefore requires reciprocal knowledge.

The relationship becomes a meeting of persons rather than an interaction between biological categories.

6. The Male as Other

The masculine is initially experienced as **other**.

He is not the woman.

He possesses a different body.

A different social position.

Different experiences.

Different tendencies.

The otherness itself can become attractive.

Difference creates mystery.

The woman encounters something she cannot completely reduce to herself.

Desire arises within that distance.

---

7. From Otherness to Communion

But desire does not necessarily seek to eliminate otherness.

Healthy union preserves distinction.

The woman remains woman.

The man remains man.

Yet they become deeply united.

This parallels the mystery of:

two becoming one flesh.

Union does not require identical bodies or identical personalities.

It requires communion.

---

8. The Symbolic Masculine

Within the symbolic framework of this book, the male represents:

direction,

strength,

initiative,

stability,

protection,

and **authority.**

The feminine may therefore desire the masculine because these qualities complement its own symbolic orientation toward:

receptivity,

relationship,

nurture,

generativity,

and **integration.**

These qualities are not exclusive to biological sex.

They are symbolic principles.

---

9. The Desire for Strength

The feminine may desire strength because strength can provide stability.

But strength becomes attractive only when disciplined by love.

Raw power can terrify.

Power transformed into protection can reassure.

Thus the woman does not necessarily desire domination.

She may desire **strength that can safely be trusted**.

The distinction is crucial.

---

10. Protection and Trust

Protection can create the conditions in which intimacy becomes possible.

The woman can entrust herself to the man when his strength is not directed against her.

The mature male therefore protects without possessing.

He creates safety without demanding dependence.

He exercises strength without turning it into coercion.

Trust becomes the bridge between strength and intimacy.

---

11. The Desire for Guidance

Within the earthly hierarchy developed in Part III, the woman may desire male guidance.

Guidance gives direction.

It provides structure.

It can relieve the burden of having to determine every course of action alone.

But genuine guidance requires wisdom.

A foolish guide is dangerous.

A selfish guide becomes oppressive.

Therefore the feminine desire for guidance presupposes a morally formed masculine.

---

12. Guidance and Freedom

Guidance does not necessarily destroy freedom.

A traveler can willingly follow a guide while remaining a free person.

The important distinction is between:

chosen trust

and

coercion.

The woman may willingly entrust leadership to the man.

But the relationship becomes unhealthy when the man's authority requires the destruction of her conscience or dignity.

The spiritual model requires both order and freedom.

---

13. Desire for Union

At its deepest relational level, desire seeks union.

The woman does not merely want the man to exist somewhere outside herself.

She wants communion with him.

She wants shared life.

Shared purpose.

Shared home.

Shared memory.

Shared future.

The two become a household.

This is the social expression of union.

---

14. One Flesh

Genesis describes marriage as becoming **one flesh**.

Ephesians returns to this language.

The phrase expresses embodied union while preserving personal distinction.

The husband does not literally become the wife.

The wife does not literally become the husband.

Yet their lives become joined.

This provides an earthly image of spiritual integration.

---

15. The Feminine and the Masculine

Within the symbolic theology of this book, the feminine seeks the masculine because each represents something the other does not fully embody.

The feminine says:

“I desire what complements me.”

The masculine says:

“I desire what complements me.”

The resulting union is not merely subtraction of difference.

It is **mutual completion**.

---

16. The Limits of Complementarity

Complementarity must not become an absolute psychological law.

Not every woman desires the same qualities.

Not every man embodies the same qualities.

Human personalities vary enormously.

Therefore the symbolic masculine and feminine should not become rigid stereotypes.

They are theological symbols rather than exhaustive descriptions of every individual.

---

17. The Feminine and Receptivity

The feminine principle is especially associated with receptivity.

Desire itself contains receptivity.

The woman opens herself to relationship.

She allows another person to affect her.

She receives love.

She receives affection.

She receives companionship.

She allows herself to be known.

This receptive dimension becomes central to the spiritual interpretation.

---

18. Receptivity Is Not Passivity

Receptivity should not be confused with inactivity.

To receive deeply requires discernment.

The woman must decide:

Whom should I trust?

What should I receive?

What should I reject?

What kind of relationship leads toward life?

The mature feminine therefore possesses boundaries.

She is receptive without being indiscriminate.

---

19. Desire Requires Discernment

Desire itself can become disordered.

A woman can desire the wrong man.

She can confuse domination with strength.

Possessiveness with love.

Control with protection.

Charisma with wisdom.

Sexual attraction with spiritual compatibility.

Therefore desire must be educated.

The mature feminine learns to distinguish what merely attracts from what is genuinely good.

20. The Male Must Become Worthy of Desire

The burden does not fall entirely upon the woman.

If the feminine desires masculine strength, the male must become worthy of trust.

He must cultivate:

integrity,

self-control,

faithfulness,

courage,

humility,

and **responsibility.**

The woman should not have to surrender herself to an immature man merely because he occupies a male role.

The spiritual male must become trustworthy.

21. The Male as Answer to Desire

The mature male answers feminine desire not through domination but through presence.

He becomes:

stable,

faithful,

protective,

attentive,

truthful,

and **sacrificial.**

His strength becomes something the woman can approach without fear.

His authority becomes something she can respect without losing herself.

---

22. The Feminine as Answer to Male Desire

The relationship is reciprocal.

The man may desire feminine qualities of:

beauty,

affection,

companionship,

nurture,

receptivity,

and **emotional intimacy.**

He too seeks something beyond himself.

The two therefore encounter one another as complementary persons.

---

23. Desire and the Inner Androgynous Human

The mystery becomes deeper when the external relationship is connected with the internal human.

The woman desires the masculine outside herself.

But she also discovers masculine qualities within herself.

The man desires the feminine outside himself.

But he also discovers feminine qualities within himself.

Thus external union can become a mirror of internal integration.

The beloved becomes a reflection of what the self is learning to discover within itself.

---

24. The Woman Becoming “Male”

Thomas 114 can therefore be reconsidered.

Mary's transformation into “male” can be understood symbolically as the acquisition of qualities associated with spiritual agency.

The feminine does not remain merely receptive.

It develops strength.

Discernment.

Courage.

Authority.

The woman becomes spiritually active.

Thus the feminine's desire for the masculine also becomes an inward movement:

“What I seek externally, I must learn to integrate internally.”

---

25. The Male Becoming Feminine

The reverse movement is equally necessary.

The male who seeks the feminine must learn to embody what he admires.

He learns tenderness.

He learns receptivity.

He learns nurture.

He learns patience.

He learns emotional openness.

Thus the beloved becomes a teacher.

The relationship becomes a school of integration.

---

26. The Inner and Outer Union

There are therefore two forms of union:

Outer union

Man and woman enter relationship.

Inner union

Masculine and feminine principles become reconciled within each person.

The two forms can illuminate one another.

Marriage becomes an embodied symbol of an interior mystery.

The external union points toward internal integration.

---

27. Desire and Spiritual Transformation

Desire can therefore become spiritually formative.

The woman learns through loving the man.

She encounters:

patience,

vulnerability,

trust,

sacrifice,

forgiveness,

and self-knowledge.

The man undergoes the same process.

Love reveals the ego.

It reveals possessiveness.

It reveals fear.

It reveals insecurity.

It reveals the need for transformation.

---

28. Desire as a Mirror

The person we desire can reveal what we lack.

A woman may discover that she longs for courage.

A man may discover that he longs for tenderness.

The beloved becomes a mirror.

The desire therefore teaches:

“What am I seeking, and why?”

The answer can reveal the hidden structure of the soul.

---

29. From Possession to Communion

The fleshly form of desire says:

“I want to possess you.”

The relational form says:

“I want to know you.”

The spiritual form says:

“I want our relationship to lead both of us toward what is good.”

This is the transformation of desire.

The other person ceases to be an object.

The other becomes a person with whom communion is possible.

---

30. Sexual Desire and Spiritual Meaning

Sexual desire belongs to embodied existence.

It can express attraction and intimacy.

Within marriage, it can participate in the unity symbolized by becoming one flesh.

But sexual desire should not be confused with the entirety of spiritual union.

The body can unite physically while the hearts remain divided.

Conversely, deep love can exist through dimensions of communion that are not sexual.

The spiritual meaning therefore exceeds the physical act.

---

31. The Desire for Permanence

Romantic desire frequently reaches toward permanence.

The woman does not merely desire a moment.

She may desire:

faithfulness,

security,

shared life,

family,

memory,

and **enduring companionship.**

This longing for permanence reflects a deeper human desire to overcome separation and transience.

---

32. The Present Age

Yet embodied relationships remain within the present age.

Bodies age.

Circumstances change.

People die.

Relationships can end.

Therefore no earthly union completely satisfies the human desire for permanence.

The longing points beyond itself.

The woman desires union with the male.

But beneath this desire lies the deeper longing for a communion that cannot be destroyed.

---

33. The Kingdom and Union

The Kingdom therefore becomes the ultimate horizon.

Earthly marriage can symbolize unity.

But spiritual fulfillment transcends the marriage itself.

The human being ultimately seeks union with divine reality.

The earthly beloved can become an image of this longing without replacing God.

The man is not the woman's savior.

The woman is not the man's savior.

Both point beyond themselves.

---

34. Desire and God

At its deepest level, desire may therefore reveal the soul's movement toward the transcendent.

The human being longs for:

beauty,

goodness,

truth,

love,

unity,

and **life.**

These desires appear in embodied relationships.

But their ultimate source and fulfillment lie beyond any individual human being.

The beloved can awaken the longing.

The beloved cannot completely satisfy it.

---

35. The Feminine as Seeker

The feminine therefore becomes a seeker.

She seeks the masculine.

She seeks relationship.

She seeks love.

She seeks union.

And ultimately she seeks the restoration of the divided human.

The desire itself becomes a movement toward wholeness.

---

36. The Male as Seeker

The male is equally a seeker.

He seeks the feminine.

He seeks companionship.

He seeks tenderness.

He seeks recognition.

He seeks union.

Both sexes are therefore manifestations of the same fundamental human longing.

The difference is embodied.

The longing is universal.

---

37. The Two as One

The phrase **“make the two one”** therefore becomes the central mystical principle.

The woman and man become one flesh.

The masculine and feminine become integrated within the individual.

The divided human moves toward unity.

The visible distinction remains.

But separation loses its absolute character.

---

38. The Feminine Desire and Spiritual Androgyny

The feminine desire for the male can therefore be interpreted as an outward expression of the deeper Androgynous Spirit.

The feminine reaches toward the masculine.

The masculine reaches toward the feminine.

Each discovers itself through the other.

Eventually both discover that the qualities they sought outside themselves also exist within.

The external relationship becomes a path toward internal integration.

---

39. Love as Transformation

Love transforms desire.

The woman begins by desiring the man.

She gradually learns to love the person.

Love requires:

patience,

sacrifice,

forgiveness,

truthfulness,

trust,

and **self-restraint.**

Desire says:

“I want.”

Love learns to say:

“I give.”

The two must eventually become one movement.

---

40. The Desire to Give

Mature desire therefore becomes reciprocal.

The woman does not merely want to receive.

She wants to give.

She gives affection.

She gives loyalty.

She gives encouragement.

She gives care.

The man likewise gives.

The relationship becomes reciprocal exchange rather than unilateral consumption.

---

41. The Spiritual Meaning of Union

Union therefore becomes more than physical proximity.

It means:

shared life,

shared purpose,

mutual recognition,

mutual sacrifice,

and **movement toward the good.**

This is why the biblical image of one flesh is so powerful.

The two remain persons.

Yet their lives become joined.

---

42. The Feminine and the Male Guide

Within the household order established in previous chapters, the feminine may willingly receive male guidance.

But spiritual maturity requires that guidance to lead toward God rather than dependence upon the man himself.

The male guide points beyond himself.

He teaches.

He protects.

He serves.

He leads.

But ultimately he says:

“Follow God.”

This preserves the proper hierarchy.

---

43. The Beloved as Mirror

The beloved can reveal both one's strengths and one's weaknesses.

The woman sees the man and discovers what she admires.

She also discovers what she fears.

The man does the same.

Relationship therefore becomes a mirror.

The ego becomes visible.

Attachment becomes visible.

Jealousy becomes visible.

Fear becomes visible.

Love becomes visible.

The mirror becomes an instrument of self-knowledge.

---

44. Desire and the Living Spirit

The final transformation occurs when desire no longer fragments the person.

The fleshly desire says:

“I must possess the other.”

The relational desire says:

“I desire communion with the other.”

The spiritual desire says:

“May this communion lead both of us toward life.”

At this point desire becomes compatible with the living Spirit.

The body remains.

The attraction remains.

But the person is no longer ruled by possession.

---

45. The Restoration of the Feminine

The feminine is restored when it can desire without becoming enslaved to desire.

It can love without losing itself.

It can submit without surrendering conscience.

It can receive without becoming passive.

It can desire the masculine without treating the male as an object of salvation.

The feminine becomes integrated.

---

46. The Restoration of the Male

The male is restored when he can receive feminine desire without exploiting it.

He does not interpret desire as permission for domination.

He treats the woman's trust as something sacred.

He responds with fidelity.

He responds with responsibility.

He responds with love.

The male becomes worthy of the feminine's trust.

---

47. The Final Union

The final union is therefore not merely:

woman + man.

It is:

difference + communion.

It is:

masculine + feminine.

It is:

body + relationship.

It is:

desire + love.

It is:

earthly union + spiritual transformation.

The two become one while remaining distinct.

Conclusion — The Feminine Desiring the Male

Female desire for union with the male begins in the body but does not have to end there.

The body experiences attraction.

The heart seeks companionship.

The household seeks unity.

The soul seeks wholeness.

The Spirit seeks integration.

The woman may therefore desire the male as:

body,

companion,

husband,

guide,

protector,

beloved,

and **symbol of the masculine principle.**

Yet the deepest meaning of this desire lies beyond possession.

The woman ultimately seeks communion.

She desires to be known.

She desires to know.

She desires to give.

She desires to receive.

She desires union without annihilation of difference.

And through that union she can discover that the masculine she sought outside herself also has a place within her own spiritual being.

Likewise, the man discovers the feminine within himself.

Thus the movement of desire becomes the movement of integration:

the feminine reaches toward the masculine,
the masculine reaches toward the feminine,
the two become one,
and the integrated human discovers the living Spirit.

Part IV — The Feminine Spirit

Chapter 18 — Submission as a Doorway

Within the framework developed in this book, submission can be interpreted as more than an external rule governing the relationship between husband and wife. It can also represent a **movement from isolated selfhood toward relational union**.

The central idea is not that the woman ceases to possess a self. Rather, she learns to place the isolated, self-directing ego within a relationship of trust, love, responsibility, and communion.

Thus submission becomes a doorway.

It is a movement:

from isolation toward relationship,
from self-will toward cooperation,
from autonomy toward communion,
from division toward unity.

But this movement must never be confused with the destruction of dignity, conscience, or personhood.

---

1. The Isolated Self

The autonomous self imagines itself as completely self-sufficient.

It says:

“I belong entirely to myself.”

“I need no one.”

“My desires determine my path.”

“I answer to no authority.”

Such independence can appear powerful.

But radical isolation also produces loneliness.

The human being is relational.

We are formed through families, friendships, communities, teachers, and loves.

The self becomes itself through relationship with others.

---

2. Autonomy and the Ego

The problem is therefore not freedom itself.

Freedom is valuable.

The problem is **self-enclosure**.

The ego can turn autonomy into a demand for absolute independence.

It refuses correction.

It refuses dependence.

It refuses vulnerability.

It refuses responsibility toward others.

Submission challenges this posture.

It says:

“You are not alone.”

---

3. Submission as Relational Opening

Within marriage, submission can therefore represent an opening of the self.

The wife recognizes another person's leadership.

She allows her life to become relationally ordered.

She does not regard herself as an isolated individual whose desires are the only consideration.

She becomes part of a shared life.

The movement is:

I → we.

---

4. The Self Is Not Destroyed

This point is essential.

The woman does not cease to be an individual.

She does not lose her name.

She does not lose her conscience.

She does not cease to think.

She does not cease to possess desires.

She does not cease to possess spiritual responsibility.

Rather, the isolated self becomes a **relational self**.

She remains herself while becoming capable of communion.

---

5. From “I” to “We”

Marriage creates a new relational identity.

There remains:

the husband

and

the wife.

But there is also:

the household.

The two become one flesh.

Their decisions affect one another.

Their lives become intertwined.

Their futures become connected.

Submission therefore becomes one dimension of learning to live within the reality of **we**.

---

6. The Pauline Framework

Ephesians 5 provides the biblical foundation for this interpretation.

The wife is instructed to submit to her husband.

But the husband is commanded to love his wife sacrificially.

Thus the relationship is not:

authority versus individuality.

It is:

authority + sacrifice + love + communion.

The husband's headship establishes direction.

The wife's submission establishes cooperation.

Both contribute to unity.

---

7. The Husband's Parallel Submission

The husband is not outside the discipline of submission.

He must submit himself to Christ.

He must submit his desires to love.

He must submit his authority to responsibility.

He must submit his pride to humility.

Therefore the household contains multiple levels of submission.

The wife submits within the marriage.

The husband submits to Christ.

Both ultimately submit to God.

---

8. The Highest Authority

The hierarchy therefore culminates not in the husband.

It culminates in God.

The structure is:

God

↓

Christ

↓

household responsibility

↓

husband and wife within their respective roles

This means that human authority remains limited.

No husband becomes an absolute ruler over his wife's conscience.

The divine remains higher.

---

9. Submission and Trust

Relational submission requires trust.

The wife entrusts herself to the husband.

That trust creates vulnerability.

Vulnerability creates intimacy.

Intimacy creates communion.

But trust must be deserved.

A man who repeatedly violates trust undermines the very foundation of relational submission.

The husband therefore bears a tremendous responsibility.

---

10. The Husband Must Become Trustworthy

The male cannot simply demand:

“Submit to me.”

He must become someone worthy of submission.

He must demonstrate:

faithfulness,

self-control,

sacrifice,

wisdom,

protection,

and **love.**

His authority must become credible through character.

---

11. Submission and Safety

The movement toward relational union requires safety.

A person cannot freely open themselves to another while constantly expecting exploitation.

The husband therefore creates the conditions in which submission can become trust rather than fear.

Protection becomes important here.

The male's strength should provide security.

The feminine should be able to approach the masculine without expecting destruction.

---

12. Submission and Vulnerability

Submission involves vulnerability because it requires the person to acknowledge:

“I cannot control everything.”

The wife permits another person to exercise legitimate leadership.

This requires trust.

But vulnerability is not weakness.

It can become a form of intimacy.

The person who refuses all vulnerability also refuses much of the possibility of communion.

---

13. The Doorway of Vulnerability

This is why submission can be described as a doorway.

On one side is:

self-protection,

independence,

control,

self-will.

On the other side is:

trust,

intimacy,

cooperation,

shared life.

The person passes through the doorway by surrendering some degree of self-directed control.

---

14. Submission and Love

Love requires some surrender of autonomy.

To love another person is to allow their existence to matter.

Their needs matter.

Their happiness matters.

Their suffering matters.

Their desires matter.

Their future matters.

The isolated self says:

“What do I want?”

Love asks:

“What is good for us?”

Submission can therefore become one expression of love when freely embraced within a healthy relationship.

---

15. The Feminine Principle of Receptivity

The feminine principle is particularly suited to this symbolism because receptivity lies at its center.

The feminine receives:

love,

life,

care,

wisdom,

relationship.

But receptivity is not emptiness.

It is capacity.

The receptive person possesses the ability to receive something greater than the isolated self.

---

16. Receptivity and Transformation

What one receives can transform the receiver.

The woman receives the husband's love.

She receives his guidance.

She receives his protection.

She receives his presence.

In a healthy marriage, these things shape her.

But the process is reciprocal.

The husband receives her love.

He receives her counsel.

He receives her trust.

He receives her affection.

He is also transformed.

The doorway therefore opens in both directions.

---

17. Submission Is Reciprocal in Love

The roles may be differentiated, but love remains reciprocal.

The husband leads.

The wife submits.

Yet the husband also gives himself.

The wife also gives herself.

Each surrenders something of self-centeredness.

Each becomes more relational.

Each learns that the other's good matters.

Thus the relationship moves beyond domination toward communion.

---

18. The Difference Between Submission and Servility

Servility means allowing oneself to be treated as inherently inferior.

Submission, in this theological sense, is different.

The woman remains a person.

She retains dignity.

She retains moral responsibility.

She retains the ability to recognize injustice.

She remains accountable to God.

The purpose is relational order, not personal degradation.

---

19. The Difference Between Submission and Fear

Fear says:

“I must obey because I will be punished.”

Trust says:

“I willingly cooperate because I believe this relationship is ordered toward good.”

The second is closer to the spiritual meaning being developed here.

Submission motivated exclusively by terror cannot produce genuine communion.

Love requires freedom.

---

20. The Difference Between Submission and Coercion

Coercion forces external compliance.

Spiritual submission involves the transformation of the will.

The difference is profound.

A coerced person may obey while inwardly resisting.

A spiritually formed person learns to align desire with what is perceived as good.

Therefore the deepest submission cannot simply be imposed from outside.

It must eventually become internal.

---

21. The Transformation of Desire

This connects submission with the previous chapter.

The feminine desires union with the masculine.

But union requires the transformation of desire.

The desire to possess becomes the desire to commune.

The desire to control becomes the desire to cooperate.

The desire for independence becomes the capacity for mutual dependence.

The person learns:

“I do not have to possess everything in order to be whole.”

---

22. Dependence and Interdependence

There is an important distinction between dependence and interdependence.

Dependence says:

“I cannot exist without you.”

Interdependence says:

“I can exist as myself, but I freely participate in a life with you.”

The second represents a healthier model of union.

The woman remains a person.

The man remains a person.

But their lives become mutually connected.

---

23. The One Flesh Mystery

The biblical concept of becoming one flesh expresses this paradox.

Two bodies.

Two minds.

Two histories.

Two wills.

Yet one marriage.

One household.

One shared life.

The two become one without becoming identical.

This is the earthly analogy for the spiritual mystery of unity within distinction.

---

24. Submission and the Androgynous Human

The Androgynous Human is not merely a person who possesses masculine and feminine traits.

It is the person who can transcend rigid isolation between them.

The woman learns masculine qualities:

courage, discernment, initiative, strength.

The man learns feminine qualities:

receptivity, compassion, nurture, tenderness.

Submission can facilitate this integration because it requires both parties to surrender rigid ego-identities.

---

25. The Woman Receives the Masculine

Within the symbolic framework, the woman encounters masculine qualities in the husband.

She receives:

direction,

stability,

strength,

protection,

leadership.

But she does not merely remain a passive recipient.

She integrates these qualities into herself.

The masculine becomes part of her spiritual development.

---

26. The Man Receives the Feminine

The husband receives:

love,

tenderness,

nurture,

receptivity,

emotional depth.

He too integrates these qualities.

The feminine becomes part of his spiritual development.

Thus marriage becomes a reciprocal process of integration.

---

27. The Inner and Outer Doorway

The external relationship therefore points toward an internal transformation.

The woman submits externally within the household order.

Internally, she learns surrender of ego.

The man leads externally.

Internally, he learns submission to God.

The outer hierarchy therefore conceals an inner paradox:

the wife learns surrender through submission;
the husband learns surrender through responsibility.

Both are being transformed.

28. Submission and the Ego

The deepest obstacle to union is ego.

The ego says:

“I must win.”

“I must control.”

“I must be right.”

“I must dominate.”

Marriage exposes these impulses.

The person discovers that love requires compromise.

Forgiveness requires surrender.

Patience requires surrender.

Listening requires surrender.

The ego therefore encounters a discipline that it cannot escape.

29. The Household as an Ascetic School

Marriage can therefore become an ascetic discipline.

The person learns:

patience through irritation,

forgiveness through conflict,

self-control through desire,

humility through correction,

generosity through responsibility,

and love through sacrifice.

The household becomes a school of spiritual formation.

---

30. The Feminine and Spiritual Receptivity

The feminine can therefore be understood as especially associated with spiritual receptivity.

The contemplative receives.

The disciple receives teaching.

The lover receives love.

The mother receives life and gives it form.

The feminine principle therefore becomes a symbol of the soul's openness toward transcendence.

The human being receives divine grace.

---

31. The Male and Spiritual Initiative

The masculine principle complements this through initiative.

The seeker searches.

The teacher speaks.

The protector acts.

The guide directs.

The spiritual male therefore symbolizes movement toward the good.

But initiative without receptivity becomes arrogance.

Receptivity without initiative becomes passivity.

The two require each other.

---

32. The Complete Human

The complete human therefore becomes:

active and receptive,

strong and gentle,

independent and relational,

directive and contemplative.

The categories cease functioning as prisons.

They become dimensions of a whole.

This is the meaning of spiritual androgyny developed throughout this work.

---

33. Submission and Freedom

The paradox can now be stated clearly:

submission can create freedom when it liberates the person from self-centered isolation.

The woman becomes free to participate in communion.

She no longer has to carry the illusion of complete self-sufficiency.

She can receive.

She can trust.

She can love.

She can belong.

This is not the loss of self.

It is the expansion of self into relationship.

---

34. Belonging

Human beings possess a profound need for belonging.

The household answers this need.

The wife belongs to the husband.

The husband belongs to the wife.

The children belong to the household.

But belonging must never become ownership.

The language is relational.

The person is not property.

Belonging means:

“My life is connected with yours.”

---

35. The Spiritual Meaning of Belonging

At the deepest level, the desire to belong points toward communion.

The human being seeks:

God,

community,

love,

home,

and **meaning.**

Marriage can provide an earthly image of this desire.

But it cannot completely satisfy it.

The deepest belonging remains spiritual.

---

36. Submission and God

The final doorway is therefore not ultimately toward the husband.

It is toward God.

The wife learns relational submission.

The husband learns responsibility.

Both eventually encounter the deeper discipline:

submission of the self to divine truth.

The marriage becomes preparation.

The household becomes practice.

The Spirit becomes the destination.

---

37. The Husband as Doorway

The husband can become a doorway toward greater spiritual integration when his leadership points beyond himself.

He teaches.

He guides.

He protects.

He loves.

But he ultimately directs the household toward God.

His authority therefore becomes transparent.

It points beyond the man who exercises it.

---

38. The Wife as Doorway

The wife can likewise become a doorway.

Her receptivity teaches the husband tenderness.

Her trust teaches him responsibility.

Her vulnerability teaches him protection.

Her love teaches him self-giving.

The feminine therefore transforms the masculine.

The doorway opens in both directions.

39. The Two as Mutual Teachers

The deepest marriage is therefore educational.

The husband teaches the wife.

The wife teaches the husband.

The husband teaches direction.

The wife teaches receptivity.

The husband teaches strength.

The wife teaches tenderness.

The husband teaches discipline.

The wife teaches compassion.

Both become students.

Both become teachers.

---

40. The Restoration of the Feminine

The feminine is restored not by abolishing its relational nature but by recognizing its dignity.

Submission can become:

chosen rather than coerced,

relational rather than degrading,

spiritual rather than merely social,

transformative rather than destructive.

The woman remains fully human.

Her submission becomes one dimension of her path toward integration.

---

41. The Restoration of the Masculine

The masculine is restored simultaneously.

The husband learns that authority exists for service.

He discovers that leadership requires sacrifice.

He learns to receive.

He learns tenderness.

He becomes less isolated.

He becomes more relational.

His authority becomes an instrument of love.

---

42. The Doorway to Unity

The final purpose of submission is therefore unity.

Not uniformity.

Not annihilation.

Not loss of individuality.

Unity.

The two become one flesh.

The masculine and feminine become integrated.

The isolated ego becomes relational.

The embodied human becomes spiritually whole.

Conclusion — Submission as a Doorway

Submission, within the framework of this book, can be understood as a doorway from isolated selfhood into relational communion.

The woman does not cease to be herself.

She does not lose her conscience.

She does not become property.

She does not become spiritually inferior.

Instead, she learns to move from:

self-will → cooperation,

isolation → relationship,

control → trust,

division → communion.

The husband undergoes his own transformation.

He moves from:

authority → responsibility,

strength → service,

independence → relationality,

command → sacrificial love.

Thus both husband and wife are being transformed.

The woman's submission opens her toward relationship.

The man's headship opens him toward responsibility.

Their marriage becomes a place where the isolated ego is gradually reordered.

The two become one flesh.

The masculine and feminine become integrated.

And beyond the earthly union lies the deeper spiritual mystery:

the self does not disappear in union.
It becomes more complete through communion.

Submission is therefore not the final destination.

It is a doorway.

And beyond the doorway stands the mystery toward which the entire book has been moving:

difference becoming unity,
division becoming wholeness,
and the embodied human becoming the living Spirit.

Part IV — The Feminine Spirit

Chapter 19 — The Male Who Liberates

The spiritually mature male is not defined by the amount of control he exercises over a woman. His maturity is revealed by what his presence produces in her.

If his authority produces fear, dependency, humiliation, and spiritual confusion, it has become corrupted.

If his authority produces truth, stability, courage, wisdom, freedom, and spiritual maturity, it has begun to resemble the form of leadership envisioned by the Christian tradition.

The male who liberates therefore does not seek to make the woman smaller so that he may appear greater.

He seeks to help her discover what she already possesses within herself.

The central principle of this chapter is:

The true guide does not imprison the person who follows him. He helps that person become capable of walking toward the truth freely.

1. Liberation Rather Than Domination

The immature male asks:

“How much control do I have over her?”

The mature male asks:

“How can I help her flourish?”

These questions reveal two entirely different forms of masculinity.

Domination seeks possession.

Liberation seeks flourishing.

Domination requires dependence.

Liberation cultivates maturity.

Domination fears independence.

Liberation prepares the other person for responsible freedom.

The distinction is fundamental.

2. The Meaning of Liberation

Liberation in this chapter does not mean abandoning every relationship, hierarchy, or responsibility.

It means liberation from what prevents spiritual development.

The woman may need liberation from:

fear,

ignorance,

shame,

disordered desire,

self-contempt,

false beliefs,

and **dependence upon human approval.**

The male guide becomes an instrument of this liberation when his leadership directs her toward truth rather than toward himself.

---

3. The Guide Must Point Beyond Himself

The greatest test of spiritual authority is whether it points beyond the person exercising it.

A false guide says:

“You need me.”

A true guide says:

“Seek truth.”

A false guide says:

“Obey me because I am powerful.”

A true guide says:

“Learn to discern.”

A false guide creates dependence.

A true guide cultivates maturity.

The spiritually mature male therefore does not make himself the center of the woman's spiritual world.

He points beyond himself.

---

4. Christ as the Model

The Christian model is Christ.

Christ guides people toward God.

He teaches.

He corrects.

He calls people to transformation.

But he does not establish himself as an object of domination.

His authority is exercised through service.

The husband's headship must therefore be interpreted through this pattern.

The male guide leads through self-giving.

---

5. The Woman as a Spiritual Person

The woman must never be treated merely as an extension of the male.

She possesses her own spiritual identity.

She can think.

She can learn.

She can discern.

She can pray.

She can seek truth.

She can receive the Spirit.

She can become spiritually mature.

Her husband may guide her within the earthly household order.

But he cannot manufacture her relationship with God.

---

6. The Hidden Identity

The woman possesses a deeper identity beneath her earthly roles.

She may be:

wife,

mother,

daughter,

teacher,

disciple,

or **household member.**

But none of these categories exhaust the person.

The deeper identity is the spiritual human.

This is what the male guide helps reveal.

---

7. The Male as Midwife of the Spirit

A useful metaphor is the **midwife**.

The midwife does not create the child.

The midwife assists something already present in nature.

Likewise, the spiritually mature male does not create the woman's spiritual identity.

He helps bring it forth.

He teaches.

He encourages.

He protects.

He challenges.

He provides stability.

But the Spirit itself comes from beyond him.

---

8. Liberation Through Knowledge

One of the greatest forms of liberation is knowledge.

Ignorance produces vulnerability.

The woman who is denied knowledge can become dependent upon whoever claims to possess it.

The mature male therefore teaches rather than conceals.

He wants his wife to understand.

He wants her to become discerning.

He wants her to recognize truth for herself.

His authority becomes educational.

---

9. The Woman Who Learns

This returns to 1 Timothy 2.

The command:

“Let the woman learn”

is crucial.

The woman is not spiritually discarded.

She is formed.

The mature male therefore welcomes genuine spiritual learning.

He does not fear an intelligent wife.

He does not interpret her wisdom as rebellion.

He recognizes that spiritual maturity strengthens the household.

---

10. Teaching Without Enslaving

The male teacher must therefore avoid intellectual domination.

He teaches without demanding that his wife become incapable of independent thought.

He explains.

He reasons.

He demonstrates.

He listens.

He allows questions.

The purpose of teaching is understanding.

A teacher who prevents questions creates dependency rather than wisdom.

---

11. The Woman's Discernment

Liberation requires discernment.

The woman must eventually be able to distinguish:

truth from falsehood,

love from manipulation,

authority from domination,

guidance from control,

submission from humiliation.

The mature male therefore helps cultivate these distinctions.

He does not hide them.

---

12. The Test of the Male Guide

The male guide can therefore be tested by a simple question:

Does the woman become more capable of recognizing truth because of him?

If yes, his influence may be constructive.

If she becomes increasingly incapable of thinking without him, something has gone wrong.

The true guide creates competence.

The false guide creates dependency.

---

13. Freedom and Trust

This does not mean that the woman must reject the husband's leadership.

She may freely trust him.

She may voluntarily submit to his guidance.

She may value his judgment.

She may seek his counsel.

But genuine trust is stronger than forced obedience.

The woman remains capable of saying:

“I trust you because you have demonstrated that you are trustworthy.”

---

14. The Husband's Responsibility

This places an enormous responsibility upon the husband.

If he wants to be trusted, he must become trustworthy.

He must demonstrate:

fidelity,

honesty,

self-control,

patience,

wisdom,

sacrifice,

and **humility.**

The woman should encounter in him a stable moral presence.

---

15. Liberation From Fear

One of the male's most important functions is to remove fear from the relationship.

The wife should not fear expressing disagreement.

She should not fear asking questions.

She should not fear admitting weakness.

She should not fear making mistakes.

The husband's authority should create safety.

A woman who is terrified of her husband is not experiencing the fullness of Christian communion.

---

16. Authority as Security

Proper authority can create stability.

A husband who accepts responsibility can reduce uncertainty.

He can make difficult decisions.

He can provide consistency.

He can protect the household.

He can absorb burdens.

This can give the wife space to flourish.

The purpose of authority is therefore not to eliminate her freedom.

It is to create conditions in which freedom and flourishing can exist.

---

17. The Male Who Creates Space

The mature male therefore creates space for the woman.

He creates space for:

learning,

prayer,

creativity,

friendship,

wisdom,

motherhood,

service,

and **spiritual development.**

His leadership does not consume the entire household.

It establishes conditions for others to flourish.

---

18. The Woman's Strength

Liberation does not make the woman weaker.

It allows her strength to emerge.

She becomes:

wise,

disciplined,

courageous,

compassionate,

faithful,

and **spiritually discerning.**

The mature husband should therefore desire his wife to become strong in virtue.

He should not fear her growth.

---

19. The Fear of a Strong Woman

An insecure man may fear a strong woman.

He may interpret her intelligence as competition.

Her independence as rebellion.

Her confidence as disrespect.

Her spiritual maturity as a threat.

But the mature male understands that the strength of his wife does not diminish him.

Her flourishing strengthens the household.

Her wisdom can strengthen his leadership.

---

20. The Masculine and Feminine Cooperation

The relationship becomes cooperative.

The husband provides direction.

The wife provides insight.

The husband bears responsibility.

The wife contributes wisdom.

The husband protects.

The wife nurtures.

The husband guides.

The wife grows.

The relationship becomes mutually reinforcing.

---

21. The Woman's Hidden Masculine

As the woman grows, she discovers masculine qualities within herself.

She becomes courageous.

She becomes discerning.

She becomes capable of decisive action.

She develops boundaries.

She develops intellectual strength.

The mature male does not suppress these qualities.

He helps cultivate them.

This is part of the woman's movement toward spiritual integration.

---

22. The Male's Hidden Feminine

The process transforms the man as well.

The woman's trust teaches him tenderness.

Her vulnerability teaches him gentleness.

Her wisdom teaches him receptivity.

Her affection teaches him openness.

Her needs teach him responsibility.

The male who liberates the feminine within the woman also discovers the feminine within himself.

---

23. Mutual Transformation

The relationship therefore becomes reciprocal.

The husband guides the wife.

The wife transforms the husband.

The husband teaches.

The wife teaches.

The husband protects.

The wife humanizes.

The husband provides structure.

The wife provides relational depth.

Both become more complete.

---

24. The Thomasine Principle

Thomas 22 says:

“Make the two one.”

This principle becomes visible within marriage.

The male and female remain distinct.

Yet they become one flesh.

Their differences become complementary.

Their relationship becomes an embodied image of integration.

The male who liberates therefore does not seek to erase the feminine.

He seeks to help it become whole.

---

25. Mary and Liberation

Thomas 114 provides the clearest symbolic example.

Mary is initially rejected because she is female.

Jesus responds by presenting her transformation into a living spirit.

Within the theology developed here, this represents liberation from the assumption that biological femaleness determines the limits of spiritual identity.

The mature male therefore does not imprison Mary within "female."

He recognizes the deeper human within her.

---

26. "Making Her Male"

The phrase "make her male" can be understood symbolically.

It does not require literal biological transformation.

It can represent the acquisition of:

spiritual agency,

discernment,

strength,

courage,

and **authority.**

The woman becomes capable of qualities associated with the masculine principle.

But the ultimate goal remains integration rather than permanent masculinity.

---

27. From Female to Integrated Human

The movement can therefore be expressed:

female body → social woman → disciplined woman → spiritually empowered woman → integrated human → living Spirit.

The male guide assists the process.

He does not own it.

The woman's transformation ultimately belongs to her own spiritual journey.

---

28. The Male as Catalyst

The male can therefore function as a catalyst.

A catalyst causes transformation without becoming the substance being transformed.

The husband can awaken qualities in the wife.

He can challenge her.

He can encourage her.

He can create opportunities.

But she must undergo the transformation herself.

The Spirit cannot be outsourced.

---

29. Liberation From the Ego

The male can also help the woman confront ego.

He may challenge selfishness.

He may expose contradictions.

He may encourage discipline.

But he must do this through love.

Correction without love becomes humiliation.

Challenge without compassion becomes domination.

The purpose is transformation.

---

30. The Woman's Own Responsibility

The woman ultimately remains responsible for her spiritual development.

She must:

learn,

discern,

pray,

cultivate virtue,

practice self-control,

seek truth,

and **love.**

The husband can assist.

He cannot substitute for her.

This protects the woman's spiritual agency.

---

31. The Male's Own Responsibility

Likewise, the man remains responsible for his own transformation.

He must:

lead,

serve,

sacrifice,

listen,

repent,

learn,

and **submit to God.**

He cannot claim that his authority excuses his own spiritual deficiencies.

The guide must also be guided.

---

32. The Guide Who Can Release

The highest test of guidance is the ability to release.

A parent eventually releases the child.

A teacher eventually releases the student.

A mentor eventually releases the disciple.

Likewise, the husband should desire his wife's spiritual maturity rather than permanent dependence.

The goal is not:

“She cannot live without me.”

The goal is:

“She has become capable of walking in truth.”

---

33. Liberation and Love

This is the highest form of love.

Love does not seek to make another person permanently dependent.

It seeks their good.

If the woman's good requires greater knowledge, give knowledge.

If it requires greater courage, encourage courage.

If it requires greater freedom from fear, create safety.

If it requires correction, correct lovingly.

Love serves transformation.

---

34. The Male as Servant of the Feminine Spirit

The male therefore becomes a servant of something deeper than himself.

He serves the woman's flourishing.

He protects the conditions in which her spiritual identity can emerge.

He does not create her Spirit.

He serves its development.

This reverses the usual understanding of domination.

Authority becomes stewardship.

---

35. The Feminine Spirit Is Not His Possession

The woman possesses an interior reality that the husband cannot own.

Her conscience belongs ultimately to God.

Her spiritual journey belongs to her.

Her relationship with God belongs to her.

Her dignity is intrinsic.

The husband can participate in her spiritual journey.

He cannot possess it.

---

36. The Male as Protector of Spiritual Freedom

This is perhaps the highest form of masculine protection.

The male protects not only the woman's body but her capacity to become spiritually mature.

He protects her from exploitation.

He protects her from fear.

He protects her from humiliation.

He protects her ability to learn.

He protects the household's moral environment.

His authority becomes protective of freedom.

---

37. Liberation Through Love

The mature male therefore liberates through love rather than force.

He does not say:

“Become like me.”

He says:

“Become what you are capable of becoming.”

He does not demand that the woman reproduce his personality.

He helps her discover her own strengths.

He does not erase difference.

He cultivates complementary flourishing.

---

38. The Male Who Points Beyond Himself

Ultimately, the male guide must point beyond himself.

He says:

“Truth is greater than me.”

“God is greater than me.”

“Your conscience remains accountable to God.”

“My authority is temporary.”

This is genuine humility.

The guide becomes transparent.

The person sees through him toward the source of truth.

---

39. The Doorway to the Kingdom

The male therefore becomes a doorway rather than a destination.

He guides the woman toward:

truth,

wisdom,

virtue,

love,

freedom,

and ultimately **God.**

The relationship becomes an earthly preparation for the Kingdom.

The husband is not the Kingdom.

He is a fellow traveler toward it.

---

40. The Final Integration

The woman becomes more complete.

She retains femininity.

She develops masculine strength.

She becomes receptive without becoming passive.

She becomes submissive within the earthly order without becoming spiritually inferior.

She becomes capable of discernment.

She becomes capable of agency.

She becomes capable of spiritual knowledge.

She becomes a living spirit.

The man is transformed simultaneously.

He becomes authoritative without domination.

Strong without cruelty.

Protective without possession.

Receptive without losing masculinity.

The two become integrated together.

Conclusion — The Male Who Liberates

The spiritually mature male does not measure his success by how completely a woman obeys him.

He measures it by whether his presence helps her become more truthful, courageous, wise, loving, and spiritually mature.

He does not imprison.

He guides.

He does not possess.

He serves.

He does not create dependence.

He cultivates maturity.

He does not demand that the woman become a smaller version of himself.

He helps reveal the deeper human within her.

The male who liberates therefore embodies a paradox:

he possesses authority, yet uses it to create freedom;
he leads, yet points beyond himself;
he protects, yet does not possess;
he teaches, yet remains teachable;
he guides the feminine, yet receives the feminine's transformation into himself.

The woman discovers the masculine principle within herself.

The man discovers the feminine principle within himself.

The two become more integrated.

And the earthly relationship becomes an image of the deeper spiritual mystery:

the guide does not become the destination.
The husband does not become God.
The woman does not become his possession.
Both are being led toward the same truth.

The male who truly liberates therefore ultimately liberates the woman **from needing him to be her ultimate authority**.

He teaches her to recognize the higher authority beyond them both.

He guides her toward freedom.
He guides her toward wisdom.
He guides her toward God.
And in doing so, he becomes worthy of the name "guide."

Part IV — The Feminine Spirit

Chapter 20 — The Woman Who Becomes Living

The figure of Mary in *Gospel of Thomas* 114 provides the culminating image for the theology of the feminine developed in this section. The saying begins with exclusion: Peter objects to Mary's presence because she is a woman. Jesus responds by declaring that he will guide her toward transformation, culminating in her becoming a “living spirit.”

Whatever one concludes about the historical meaning of Thomas 114, its symbolic power within this book is unmistakable.

The female body does not need to disappear for the deeper human to awaken.

Mary does not become biologically male.

Rather, the text can be read as dramatizing a movement beyond the assumption that bodily sex exhausts spiritual identity.

The central proposition is:

The woman remains embodied as woman while discovering that the deepest dimension of her being is not exhausted by the female body.

---

1. The Woman in the Flesh

Mary begins within ordinary embodied existence.

She possesses a female body.

She occupies a social position as a woman.

She exists within the structures of her historical world.

She therefore experiences all the limitations associated with embodied life:

mortality,

desire,

social expectations,

vulnerability,

and **the limitations of the flesh.**

But these conditions do not define the whole person.

---

2. The Body Is Not the Whole Human

The theology developed throughout this book distinguishes between:

body

and

Spirit.

The body is real.

It matters.

It participates in human life.

But it is not the entirety of the human being.

The woman therefore does not need to reject her body in order to discover Spirit.

She needs to recognize that her identity extends beyond it.

---

3. The Female Body Remains

This point is essential to the interpretation.

Mary's transformation does not require imagining that her physical body literally changes sex.

The symbolism concerns identity rather than anatomy.

The female body remains.

The woman remains embodied.

What changes is her spiritual condition.

She moves from:

unawakened humanity

toward:

living Spirit.

---

4. Peter's Objection

Thomas 114 begins with Peter's rejection of Mary.

The objection is based upon her being female.

Within the narrative, her biological sex is treated as a barrier to spiritual participation.

This becomes the problem that Jesus overturns.

The question is therefore:

Does being female prevent a person from becoming spiritually alive?

The saying answers in the negative.

---

5. Jesus' Response

Jesus does not simply ignore Mary.

He responds by declaring that he will guide her.

The significance is profound.

The rejected woman is not abandoned.

She becomes the recipient of spiritual transformation.

The person whom Peter regards as disqualified becomes the person Jesus explicitly includes within the path toward life.

---

6. From Exclusion to Inclusion

The movement is therefore:

rejection → guidance → transformation → life.

Mary begins outside the imagined circle of spiritual possibility.

She ends within it.

The story therefore challenges the assumption that biological categories determine spiritual destiny.

The female body becomes the starting point rather than the prison.

7. The Meaning of “Male”

Thomas 114 contains the controversial language of making Mary “male.”

Taken literally, the statement is difficult to reconcile with the broader symbolism of the book.

But read mystically, “male” can represent qualities associated with spiritual maturity:

agency,

strength,

discernment,

courage,

authority,

and **spiritual independence.**

Mary becomes capable of what Peter believed her sex prevented her from becoming.

---

8. Male as Spiritual Symbol

The symbolic male is therefore not simply a biological male.

It represents the active spiritual principle.

The woman who becomes “male” becomes spiritually active.

She ceases to be treated as merely passive.

She learns.

She discerns.

She acts.

She becomes capable of direct participation in spiritual reality.

The transformation is therefore from:

passive social category

to:

active spiritual person.

---

9. But Male Is Not the Final Identity

Yet Thomas 22 provides an essential corrective.

The goal is to:

“make the two one.”

Therefore becoming “male” cannot represent the permanent elimination of the feminine.

If it did, spiritual perfection would simply mean becoming masculine.

The deeper principle is integration.

Mary acquires the masculine dimension.

She does not cease to possess the feminine.

The two become one.

---

10. The Androgynous Spirit

The Androgynous Spirit therefore transcends ordinary sexual polarity.

It contains:

masculine strength

and

feminine receptivity.

It possesses:

initiative and contemplation,

authority and humility,

discernment and compassion,

strength and tenderness.

Mary's transformation can therefore be understood as her movement toward this integrated condition.

---

11. The Awakening

What changes in Mary is ultimately consciousness.

She moves from identification with the limitations imposed upon her toward recognition of a deeper identity.

The awakening involves:

knowledge,

discernment,

self-transcendence,

spiritual agency,

and **direct orientation toward the divine.**

The woman discovers that she is more than the social category assigned to her.

---

12. The Living Spirit

The phrase “living spirit” provides the culmination.

The goal is not merely:

“become male.”

The goal is:

become alive.

The masculine language describes the transformation.

The living Spirit describes its result.

Mary moves beyond the assumption that biological femaleness prevents spiritual life.

She becomes spiritually alive.

---

13. From Flesh to Spirit

The transformation can therefore be represented:

female flesh

↓

social limitation

↓

spiritual learning

↓

masculine agency

↓

integration

↓

living Spirit

This is the complete movement.

The flesh is not necessarily destroyed.

It is transcended as the ultimate definition of the person.

---

14. The Body as Vessel

Within the theology developed here, the body can be understood as a vessel.

It is the temporary form through which the spiritual human experiences embodied existence.

The female body therefore becomes the vessel through which Mary's spiritual awakening occurs.

The vessel is not identical with what it contains.

The body expresses the person.

But the Spirit exceeds bodily form.

---

15. The Woman Does Not Need to Hate Her Body

This distinction prevents the doctrine from becoming hatred of embodiment.

Mary does not need to despise being female.

She does not need to regard her body as evil simply because it is female.

Instead, she learns that the body does not determine the entire horizon of her identity.

The female body becomes a temporary form within a deeper spiritual journey.

---

16. The Transformation of Desire

Mary's transformation also involves desire.

The flesh desires immediate objects.

The Spirit desires truth.

The flesh seeks possession.

The Spirit seeks understanding.

The flesh seeks recognition.

The Spirit seeks reality.

The awakened woman therefore does not necessarily cease experiencing desire.

Her desires become reordered.

She learns what deserves to be desired.

---

17. From Being Desired to Desiring Truth

The woman can therefore move beyond being defined by whether men desire her.

This is an important liberation.

Her value is not determined by:

beauty,

sexual attractiveness,

marital status,

or **male approval.**

She becomes a seeker of truth.

Her spiritual identity becomes intrinsic.

She does not need male desire to validate her existence.

---

18. Mary as Disciple

Mary's significance therefore lies partly in her position as a disciple.

She is not merely a woman being discussed by men.

She becomes a person receiving spiritual teaching.

She becomes an active participant in the mystery.

This changes the perspective.

The woman is no longer merely an object of theological discussion.

She becomes a subject of spiritual transformation.

---

19. The Woman Who Learns

This connects Thomas with 1 Timothy.

The Pastoral tradition says:

“Let a woman learn.”

Thomas presents Mary as someone capable of transformation.

The two traditions therefore share an important underlying principle:

the woman is capable of spiritual formation.

Their respective conclusions concerning ecclesial authority differ, but neither requires treating the female as incapable of spiritual life.

---

20. The Woman Who Becomes Wise

The living woman is therefore a wise woman.

She does not simply obey.

She understands.

She does not merely receive.

She integrates.

She does not merely follow.

She discerns.

She does not merely exist.

She awakens.

The Spirit transforms passive existence into conscious life.

---

21. The Restoration of Agency

The restoration of the feminine therefore includes restoration of agency.

The woman becomes capable of:

choosing,

understanding,

discernment,

responsibility,

action,

and **spiritual knowledge.**

Her submission within the earthly order does not erase these capacities.

Indeed, spiritual formation strengthens them.

---

22. The Woman and the Male Guide

The male guide described in Chapter 19 plays a role in this transformation.

He teaches.

He protects.

He encourages.

He creates conditions for learning.

But he does not create Mary's Spirit.

He helps reveal what is already possible within her.

This is why the spiritually mature male is a liberator rather than a possessor.

---

23. The Guide Must Eventually Become Unnecessary

The ultimate success of spiritual guidance is the emergence of maturity.

The teacher wants the student to become capable.

The guide wants the traveler to learn the path.

The husband wants his wife to become spiritually mature.

Thus guidance contains a paradox:

the better the guide, the less dependent the disciple becomes upon the guide.

The disciple eventually sees directly.

---

24. Direct Knowledge

This is especially important within a Gnostic framework.

Knowledge is not merely information.

It is recognition.

The woman discovers:

“I am more than the identity imposed upon my body.”

She recognizes the spiritual dimension within herself.

The external guide has pointed her toward an internal awakening.

---

25. The Hidden Spirit

The Spirit was hidden.

It was obscured by:

ignorance,

social identity,

fear,

desire,

and **attachment to the visible world.**

The awakening reveals what was concealed.

Mary does not receive an entirely foreign identity.

She discovers something deeper.

---

26. The Seed of Spirit

Within the broader Sethian language developed elsewhere in this book, this can be described as the awakening of the spiritual seed.

The seed exists within the embodied condition.

It is obscured.

It must be awakened.

The spiritual person recognizes its origin beyond the present order.

Mary therefore becomes an image of the awakened spiritual seed.

---

27. The Woman Beyond Social Role

The woman is often defined socially through relationships:

daughter,

wife,

mother,

sister,

servant.

These relationships matter.

But they do not exhaust the person.

Mary's spiritual awakening reveals a deeper identity.

She becomes herself before God.

---

28. The Woman Beyond Marriage

This is particularly important within the theology of submission and marriage.

Marriage can become a path toward spiritual formation.

But marriage is not the woman's ultimate identity.

She is not merely someone's wife.

She possesses a spiritual destiny independent of marital status.

Her husband may help guide her.

But he cannot define the totality of her existence.

---

29. The Woman Beyond Motherhood

Likewise, motherhood is significant within Titus 2.

But motherhood is not the entirety of female spirituality.

The woman who cannot or does not become a mother is not therefore spiritually incomplete.

The deeper identity remains Spirit.

Mary's story symbolizes precisely this transcendence of bodily and social categories.

---

30. The Woman Beyond Sexuality

The same principle applies to sexuality.

The woman is not reducible to sexual attractiveness.

Her body does not exist merely for male desire.

Her spiritual identity exceeds sexual function.

She can become:

wise,

holy,

disciplined,

contemplative,

courageous,

and **spiritually alive.**

---

31. The Woman Who Becomes Free

Mary's transformation therefore becomes liberation.

She is liberated from the assumption:

“Because I am female, I cannot become spiritually complete.”

The answer is:

the body does not have the final word.

The woman becomes free to discover her deeper identity.

---

32. Freedom and Responsibility

Spiritual freedom does not mean absence of responsibility.

Mary becomes more responsible for herself.

She must discern.

She must learn.

She must cultivate virtue.

She must seek truth.

The awakening of Spirit increases responsibility.

Knowledge creates accountability.

---

33. The Woman Who Becomes Responsible

The spiritually awakened woman therefore cannot simply blame:

society,

her husband,

her body,

her circumstances,

or **her past.**

She becomes responsible for the orientation of her own life.

She may receive guidance.

But she must ultimately choose.

This is spiritual adulthood.

---

34. The Integration of Submission

This provides the final interpretation of submission.

Submission is not the permanent destruction of agency.

It is a discipline within an earthly relationship.

The spiritually mature woman can submit relationally while possessing spiritual agency.

She can say:

“I willingly participate in this order.”

without saying:

“I have no self.”

---

35. The Woman Who Knows Herself

The awakened woman therefore possesses self-knowledge.

She knows:

what she desires,

what she fears,

what she believes,

what she values,

what she must overcome,

and **what she seeks.**

This knowledge allows her to become spiritually responsible.

---

36. The Woman Who Knows God

But self-knowledge ultimately points beyond itself.

The woman who knows herself recognizes that she is not self-created.

She seeks the source of Spirit.

She moves from:

self-knowledge

toward

knowledge of God.

The awakening therefore becomes theological.

The self becomes a doorway to transcendence.

---

37. The Woman and the Kingdom

The Kingdom is the final horizon.

Mary's transformation points toward a state in which bodily identity no longer determines spiritual possibility.

The woman enters the Kingdom not because she has ceased being female, but because her deeper identity has awakened.

The Spirit becomes primary.

---

38. The Feminine Beyond the Binary

At the highest level, the categories male and female themselves become relative.

They describe embodied existence.

They do not fully describe Spirit.

The Spirit transcends the binary without denying the body.

Thus the woman becomes spiritually whole without requiring literal transformation into a man.

---

39. The Androgynous Human

The final state can therefore be called **Androgynous** in the mystical sense.

The woman contains:

feminine receptivity

and

masculine agency.

The man contains:

masculine agency

and

feminine receptivity.

Both become integrated.

Neither remains trapped within a single symbolic polarity.

---

40. The Living Woman

The “living” woman is therefore the woman who has awakened.

She is no longer defined entirely by:

body,

social role,

sexuality,

marriage,

or **external authority.**

She has discovered the deeper dimension of herself.

She lives from Spirit.

---

41. The Meaning of Life

To become living is therefore more than biological existence.

A person can possess biological life while remaining spiritually asleep.

The living Spirit is conscious of truth.

It recognizes the deeper reality.

It becomes oriented toward the Kingdom.

Mary therefore represents a transition:

biological life → spiritual life.

---

42. The Woman Who Awakens

The awakening can be described as a sequence:

she hears

→ she learns

→ she understands

→ she discerns

→ she integrates

→ she awakens

→ she becomes living.

This is spiritual formation.

---

43. The Female and the Divine Image

The woman does not become spiritually alive by ceasing to bear the female form.

The divine image is not restricted to male embodiment.

Woman and man both participate in humanity.

The spiritual awakening therefore restores the woman to the fullness of her humanity.

---

44. The Male and Female Reconciled

The male also undergoes the same process.

He discovers the feminine within himself.

She discovers the masculine within herself.

They therefore become mirrors of one another.

The relationship between them becomes a path toward integration.

The two reveal something hidden within each other.

---

45. Mary as Symbol

Mary therefore becomes more than an individual figure within Thomas.

Within this book she becomes a symbol of:

the excluded becoming included,

the feminine becoming spiritually active,

the body becoming transparent to Spirit,

the passive becoming conscious,

the divided becoming whole,

and **the dead becoming living.**

---

46. The Final Meaning of “Male”

The phrase “make her male” can therefore be interpreted as:

make her spiritually complete.

The masculine language represents the acquisition of spiritual agency.

The final destination, however, is not masculinity.

It is life.

It is Spirit.

It is wholeness.

---

47. The Woman as Living Spirit

The complete transformation can therefore be represented:

female body

→ socially defined woman

→ disciple

→ learner

→ spiritually discerning woman

→ integrated human

→ living Spirit.

The body remains.

The identity expands.

---

48. The Kingdom Beyond the Body

The Kingdom therefore represents the final transcendence of bodily limitation.

The woman does not need to despise the body.

She recognizes its temporality.

The body belongs to the present age.

The Spirit points beyond it.

The Kingdom reveals what the flesh could not contain.

49. The Final Liberation

Mary's liberation is therefore ultimately liberation from false identification.

She is not merely:

female.

She is not merely:

wife.

She is not merely:

mother.

She is not merely:

disciple.

She is a spiritual human being.

The categories remain true at their respective levels.

But they are no longer absolute.

50. The Woman Who Becomes Living

The title of this chapter therefore expresses the entire movement.

The woman who becomes living is not the woman who stops being female.

She is the woman who discovers that **female is not the entirety of what she is**.

Her body remains.

Her history remains.

Her relationships remain.

But the Spirit awakens.

The woman becomes capable of knowing.

Capable of loving.

Capable of discerning.

Capable of transcending the limitations imposed upon her.

Capable of entering the Kingdom.

Conclusion — Mary and the Awakening of the Feminine

Mary represents the culmination of the feminine journey developed throughout this part of the book.

She begins as a woman whose biological sex is treated as an obstacle.

She becomes the recipient of spiritual guidance.

She learns.

She undergoes transformation.

She becomes “male” in the symbolic sense of acquiring spiritual agency.

And finally she becomes a **living spirit**.

The transformation does not require the destruction of the female body.

It requires the awakening of the person within it.

Thus:

the body remains female,
the social identity remains embodied,
the masculine principle is integrated,
the feminine principle is preserved,
and the Spirit awakens beyond both.

Mary therefore becomes an image of the complete human being.

She demonstrates that the woman can be:

receptive without being passive,
submissive without being spiritually inferior,
feminine without being confined by femininity,
strong without ceasing to be feminine,
and embodied without being imprisoned by the body.

The final transformation is not:

woman → man.

It is:

woman → integrated human → living Spirit.

And this completes the movement begun with “make the two one.”

The feminine discovers the masculine.

The masculine discovers the feminine.

The two are reconciled.

The body remains what it is.

But the Spirit awakens.

And the woman becomes living.

Part V — The Restoration of the Androgynous Human

Chapter 21 — Inside and Outside

The mystery of the Androgynous Human reaches a new stage when the distinction between **inside and outside** is examined.

Throughout the preceding chapters, masculine and feminine have appeared both externally and internally.

Externally, there is:

male and female,

husband and wife,

guide and disciple,

leader and follower.

Internally, there is:

masculine and feminine,

active and receptive,

strength and tenderness,

initiative and contemplation.

Thomas 22 provides the central mystical key:

> "Make the two one."

The saying can therefore be read as a call to reconcile opposites—not by destroying either side, but by discovering the deeper unity in which both can exist.

---

1. The Two

The first mystery is the existence of the two.

Human experience begins with differentiation.

There is:

self and other,

male and female,

body and spirit,

inside and outside,

visible and invisible,

earth and heaven.

The human being experiences reality through distinctions.

Yet distinctions can become divisions.

The two can become enemies.

The mystical task is therefore not simply to recognize the two, but to discover how the two can become one.

---

2. Inside

The inside represents the hidden dimension of the human person.

It includes:

thought,

desire,

memory,

conscience,

imagination,

emotion,

and **Spirit.**

The interior human cannot be completely observed from outside.

A person's body can be seen.

The person's deepest consciousness cannot be directly seen.

The inner world therefore becomes the hidden sanctuary of spiritual transformation.

---

3. Outside

The outside represents embodiment.

It includes:

the body,

social identity,

relationships,

occupation,

gender,

family,

and **the visible world.**

The outside is not unreal.

It is simply incomplete.

The problem arises when the visible identity is mistaken for the entirety of the human person.

---

4. The Outer Male and Female

Male and female first appear externally.

The body establishes a distinction.

The male body is not the female body.

The female body is not the male body.

This difference is real within embodied existence.

But the distinction does not automatically establish spiritual separation.

The outer difference can coexist with inner unity.

---

5. The Inner Male and Female

Within each human being, however, symbolic masculinity and femininity can coexist.

The man may possess:

tenderness, receptivity, compassion, and nurture.

The woman may possess:

strength, initiative, courage, and authority.

Thus the internal human cannot be completely mapped onto biological sex.

The interior world is more complex.

---

6. The Outer and Inner Become Mirrors

The external male and female relationship can therefore become a mirror of the internal human.

The man discovers feminine qualities through relationship with woman.

The woman discovers masculine qualities through relationship with man.

Each encounters something outside that reveals something inside.

The beloved becomes a mirror.

---

7. Thomas 22

Thomas 22 presents several pairs of opposites:

two becoming one,

inside becoming like outside,

outside becoming like inside,

above becoming like below,

and other transformations of polarity.

Within the theology developed here, these images describe the restoration of fragmentation.

The human being is divided.

The saying calls the divided human toward integration.

---

8. Inside Like Outside

The first movement is bringing the inner and outer into correspondence.

The person ceases to live one identity externally while possessing another internally.

The outer life begins to express the inner truth.

The person becomes integrated.

There is no longer an enormous division between:

what I am

and

what I pretend to be.

---

9. Outside Like Inside

The reverse movement is equally important.

The external world becomes transformed by the interior Spirit.

The person does not simply retreat inward.

The awakened interior begins to shape behavior.

Wisdom becomes action.

Love becomes conduct.

Faith becomes practice.

Spirit becomes embodied.

The inner must enter the outer.

---

10. The Reconciliation of Inside and Outside

The complete human therefore does not choose:

inner spirituality

over

outer embodiment.

Instead:

Spirit transforms embodiment.

The body becomes an instrument of the inner life.

Speech expresses truth.

Hands express service.

Sexuality becomes disciplined.

Authority becomes responsibility.

Relationships become expressions of love.

The inside becomes visible through the outside.

---

11. The Problem of Hypocrisy

This provides a spiritual interpretation of hypocrisy.

Hypocrisy occurs when inside and outside contradict each other.

The person appears righteous externally while cultivating corruption internally.

The person speaks of humility while seeking domination.

The person speaks of love while practicing hatred.

The person speaks of truth while living dishonestly.

The inner and outer have become divided.

---

12. Integration as the Cure for Hypocrisy

The cure is integration.

The person becomes what they claim to be.

The inner and outer increasingly correspond.

This does not mean perfection.

It means honesty.

The person can acknowledge weakness rather than constructing a false exterior.

The integrated human no longer requires a mask.

---

13. The Mask

The social self can become a mask.

The person performs:

man,

woman,

husband,

wife,

leader,

disciple,

religious person.

These roles can be legitimate.

But they become dangerous when the person identifies completely with them.

The mask becomes the identity.

The deeper person disappears.

---

14. Beyond the Mask

Thomas 22 points beyond the mask.

The human being must discover what exists beneath social distinctions.

The male discovers that he contains feminine dimensions.

The female discovers that she contains masculine dimensions.

The husband discovers that he is also a disciple.

The wife discovers that she is also a spiritual subject.

The social roles remain.

But they no longer imprison the person.

---

15. The Masculine and Feminine Reconciled

The Androgynous Human therefore does not abolish masculinity and femininity.

It reconciles them.

The man becomes capable of:

strength and tenderness.

The woman becomes capable of:

receptivity and initiative.

Both possess:

reason and emotion,

authority and humility,

action and contemplation.

The two become one within the human person.

---

16. The Outer Marriage and Inner Marriage

Marriage provides an external image of this mystery.

The husband and wife become one flesh.

The individual undergoes an internal marriage.

Masculine and feminine qualities become integrated.

Thus there are two levels of union:

outer union between persons

and

inner union within the person.

The two illuminate one another.

---

17. The Man Who Finds the Feminine Within

The spiritually mature man discovers:

“The tenderness I admire in woman is also possible within me.”

He learns to nurture.

He learns to listen.

He learns to receive.

He learns vulnerability.

He discovers that these qualities do not destroy masculinity.

They complete it.

---

18. The Woman Who Finds the Masculine Within

The spiritually mature woman discovers:

“The courage I admire in man is also possible within me.”

She learns to act.

She learns to lead when necessary.

She learns discernment.

She develops strength.

She becomes spiritually active.

The masculine becomes integrated rather than foreign.

---

19. The External Other

The beloved therefore becomes an encounter with the “other.”

The other possesses something unfamiliar.

This unfamiliarity creates attraction.

But the deeper discovery is:

what I see outside may reveal what is hidden inside.

The other becomes a mirror of the self.

---

20. Desire as Recognition

Desire therefore contains an element of recognition.

We may desire qualities that resonate with something latent within us.

The woman desires masculine strength.

She discovers her own strength.

The man desires feminine tenderness.

He discovers his own tenderness.

Desire becomes a teacher.

---

21. The Restoration of Desire

The transformation of desire follows the same movement as everything else:

possession → relationship → recognition → integration.

The person begins by wanting the other.

The person then learns to love the other.

The person recognizes the other as a mirror.

The person discovers the other within.

The external desire becomes an internal transformation.

---

22. Above and Below

Thomas 22 also speaks of bringing **above and below** together.

Within this framework, above can symbolize:

Spirit,

heaven,

transcendence,

and **the divine.**

Below can symbolize:

body,

earth,

embodiment,

and **ordinary existence.**

The restoration of the human requires their reconciliation.

---

23. Spirit and Body

The spiritual person therefore does not simply escape embodiment.

Spirit must illuminate the body.

The body becomes the field of spiritual practice.

The person learns to:

speak truth,

practice compassion,

control desire,

exercise responsible authority,

and **serve others.**

Spirit descends into conduct.

---

24. Body and Spirit

The reverse movement also occurs.

The embodied person reaches toward Spirit.

Through:

prayer,

contemplation,

knowledge,

discipline,

and **love,**

the human being transcends identification with bodily limitation.

Thus:

Spirit enters the body,

and

the body reaches toward Spirit.

The two movements meet.

---

25. The Present Age and the Kingdom

This reconciliation also concerns the present world and the Kingdom.

The present age is characterized by division.

The Kingdom represents unity.

The spiritual human begins the restoration now.

The Kingdom completes it.

Thus mystical transformation is an anticipation of final restoration.

---

26. The Living Spirit

The living Spirit is therefore the human being in whom opposites have begun to reconcile.

The person remains embodied.

The person remains male or female.

The person remains socially situated.

But these categories no longer possess absolute power over identity.

The Spirit becomes the deepest reference point.

---

27. The Female Who Becomes Male

Mary's transformation can now be understood more completely.

She does not become biologically male.

She integrates the masculine principle.

She gains:

agency,

knowledge,

courage,

discernment.

She becomes capable of spiritual action.

The feminine becomes integrated with the masculine.

---

28. The Male Who Becomes Feminine

The reverse movement occurs within the male.

He integrates:

tenderness,

receptivity,

compassion,

nurture.

He becomes capable of receiving rather than constantly asserting.

The masculine becomes integrated with the feminine.

---

29. Neither Male Nor Female Alone

The complete human therefore cannot be reduced to either polarity.

This does not deny biological sex.

It distinguishes biological identity from spiritual completeness.

The body is male or female.

The Spirit transcends the distinction.

The person becomes internally whole.

---

30. The Reconciliation of Authority and Submission

The same principle applies to the household order.

The husband leads.

The wife submits.

But both ultimately submit to God.

The husband exercises authority through service.

The wife exercises receptivity through conscious participation.

Authority and submission become complementary rather than antagonistic.

---

31. Submission Within the Inner Human

There is also an internal form of submission.

The masculine ego must submit to wisdom.

The feminine ego must submit to truth.

Desire must submit to discernment.

Emotion must submit to wisdom.

Reason must submit to love.

The entire human being becomes ordered.

---

32. Authority Within

Likewise, there is internal authority.

The rational and spiritual dimensions of the person must guide lower impulses.

The person learns:

desire does not command me.

fear does not command me.

anger does not command me.

pride does not command me.

The Spirit guides.

---

33. Inside and Outside as One

The final integration is therefore:

inner truth

and

outer conduct.

The person becomes what they understand.

The person lives what they believe.

The person embodies what they know.

The Spirit becomes visible through the life.

---

34. Knowledge Becoming Life

This is particularly important for Gnostic spirituality.

Knowledge cannot remain abstract.

To know truth without becoming transformed by truth is incomplete.

The knowledge must become:

virtue,

discipline,

love,

wisdom,

and **action.**

The knower becomes what is known.

---

35. The Inner Kingdom

The Kingdom can therefore be discovered inwardly.

The person recognizes the divine orientation within.

But the Kingdom cannot remain merely subjective.

It must become embodied.

The inner Kingdom produces outer transformation.

The person becomes a living expression of the reality discovered within.

---

36. The Outer Kingdom

The transformed human also changes relationships.

The household becomes more loving.

Authority becomes service.

Submission becomes trust.

Sexuality becomes responsibility.

Knowledge becomes wisdom.

The external world begins to reflect the internal transformation.

---

37. The Two Become One

The phrase “make the two one” therefore becomes the organizing principle of the entire book.

It applies to:

male and female,

inside and outside,

body and Spirit,

above and below,

authority and submission,

knowledge and life,

self and other.

The apparent opposites become integrated.

---

38. Unity Does Not Mean Sameness

Unity must not be confused with sameness.

The husband does not become the wife.

The woman does not become biologically male.

The body does not become Spirit.

The earth does not literally become heaven.

The distinctions remain.

But they cease to be experienced as absolute separation.

Unity is **communion without annihilation of difference.**

---

39. The Mystery of Distinction

Difference itself becomes sacred.

Without distinction there could be no relationship.

Without otherness there could be no love.

Without masculine and feminine there could be no embodied marital polarity.

Without inner and outer there could be no process of integration.

The goal is therefore not to erase difference.

It is to place difference within unity.

---

40. The Integrated Human

The integrated human can therefore say:

“I am embodied, but I am more than my body.”

“I am male or female, but Spirit exceeds the distinction.”

“I possess authority, but I remain under God.”

“I can submit, but I do not lose my dignity.”

“I can act, but I can also receive.”

“I can be strong, but I can also be tender.”

The opposites become compatible.

---

41. The Final Reconciliation

The movement of Thomas 22 can therefore be understood as a mystical anthropology.

The divided human is restored.

The external and internal become harmonious.

The masculine and feminine become integrated.

The body becomes transparent to Spirit.

The visible becomes a vessel for the invisible.

The human being becomes whole.

Conclusion — Inside and Outside

Thomas 22 provides a powerful symbol for the entire theological project:

“Make the two one.”

The two are not destroyed.

They are reconciled.

The male discovers the feminine within himself.

The female discovers the masculine within herself.

The inner becomes visible through the outer.

The outer becomes transformed by the inner.

The body becomes an instrument of Spirit.

The Spirit becomes embodied through life.

The husband and wife become one flesh.

The divided human becomes one within himself.

And the deepest mystery emerges:

what appears divided on the outside may already possess a hidden unity within.

The goal is therefore not to flee difference.

It is to discover the unity that can contain difference.

The woman remains woman.

The man remains man.

The body remains body.

The world remains the world.

Yet beneath these distinctions, the living Spirit discovers itself as something deeper than any single external identity.

The two become one.

The inside becomes like the outside.

The outside becomes like the inside.

And the human being begins to recover the image of the **Androgynous Human**—whole, integrated, and spiritually alive.

Part V — The Restoration of the Androgynous Human

Chapter 22 — Above and Below

The mystery of the Androgynous Human cannot be completed merely through reconciliation of masculine and feminine. The deeper division is between **above and below**: the heavenly and the earthly, the invisible and the visible, Spirit and flesh, the transcendent and the embodied.

Thomas 22 places these opposites alongside the command to make the two one. Within the theology developed in this book, this becomes a vision of restoration in which the human being learns to recognize the heavenly origin of the Spirit while remaining embodied within the earthly order.

The goal is not simply to escape below.

Nor is it to confuse below with above.

The goal is to understand their proper relationship.

Above gives origin and direction.
Below provides embodiment and expression.

The restoration of the human occurs when the two are rightly ordered.

---

1. The Meaning of Above

“Above” represents the realities that transcend ordinary material existence.

It signifies:

Spirit,

heaven,

divine reality,

truth,

wisdom,

light,

and **the Kingdom.**

Above is therefore not merely a physical location in the sky.

It represents the higher order of reality.

---

2. The Meaning of Below

“Below” represents embodied existence.

It includes:

the body,

the earth,

sexual differentiation,

ordinary human relationships,

work,

suffering,

desire,

and **mortality.**

Below is the realm in which human beings presently live.

It is the field in which spiritual transformation occurs.

---

3. The Problem of Separation

The divided human experiences above and below as opposing realities.

The person may become entirely absorbed in earthly existence.

The body becomes the whole identity.

Or the person may reject embodiment entirely, imagining that spirituality requires hatred of the physical world.

Both extremes create fragmentation.

The mystical path seeks reconciliation.

---

4. Spirit in the Body

The human being is embodied Spirit.

The body is therefore not meaningless.

It is the place where spiritual life becomes visible.

Compassion requires hands.

Speech requires a body.

Service requires action.

Prayer can involve bodily posture.

Love becomes expressed through physical presence.

The invisible becomes visible through embodiment.

---

5. The Body as Temple

The biblical image of the body as a temple provides an important parallel.

The body can become a dwelling place for divine life.

The earthly therefore becomes capable of revealing the heavenly.

This does not mean that the body itself becomes God.

It means that embodied existence can become a vessel for spiritual reality.

---

6. The Heavenly Origin of the Spirit

Within the Gnostic framework developed in this book, the Spirit possesses an origin beyond the visible cosmos.

The pneumatic human therefore experiences a kind of homesickness.

Something within recognizes that its deepest identity cannot be completely explained by the material world.

The person seeks the source from which the Spirit came.

This is the beginning of ascent.

---

7. The Earthly Condition

Yet the spiritual person remains embodied.

The human being eats.

Sleeps.

Works.

Forms relationships.

Experiences sexuality.

Ages.

Suffers.

And eventually dies.

The spiritual path therefore cannot simply pretend that earthly existence does not exist.

The question becomes:

How should the heavenly Spirit live within earthly conditions?

---

8. The Descent of the Heavenly

The movement is not exclusively upward.

There is also a descent.

Truth descends into understanding.

Understanding descends into conduct.

Love descends into relationships.

Spirit descends into embodied life.

The heavenly becomes visible through the earthly.

This is the second half of restoration.

---

9. The Ascent of the Earthly

There is also an ascent.

The embodied person begins to turn toward:

wisdom,

contemplation,

virtue,

knowledge,

love,

and **God.**

The earthly human reaches toward the heavenly.

Thus there are two movements:

heaven descends

and

earth ascends.

The human being stands at their intersection.

---

10. Above Gives Direction

The heavenly provides the standard by which earthly life is judged.

Without a higher reference point, earthly desire can become its own authority.

The person asks:

What do I want?

The spiritual person asks:

What is true?

What is good?

What leads toward the Kingdom?

Above provides orientation.

---

11. Below Provides Practice

Earthly existence provides the place where spiritual principles become real.

It is easy to speak of compassion in abstraction.

It is harder to practice compassion when someone has wronged you.

It is easy to speak of patience.

It is harder to practice patience under pressure.

It is easy to speak of self-control.

It is harder to practice it when desire is intense.

The earthly world becomes the field of spiritual training.

---

12. The Human as Mediator

The human being therefore occupies an unusual position.

The human is:

earthly by body

and

heavenly by Spirit.

The person stands between two orders.

The human can descend entirely into material identification.

Or the human can awaken to the higher reality.

The integrated person allows heaven to transform earth.

---

13. Above and Below Within the Human

The distinction also exists internally.

The “above” within the human can represent:

reason,

Spirit,

conscience,

wisdom,

and **transcendent awareness.**

The “below” can represent:

appetite,

impulse,

passion,

fear,

and **bodily desire.**

Spiritual maturity does not require destroying the lower dimensions.

It requires ordering them.

---

14. Spirit Governs Desire

The body experiences desire.

The Spirit provides direction.

The mature person does not necessarily eliminate desire.

Instead, desire becomes ordered toward what is good.

Sexual desire becomes fidelity.

Hunger becomes moderation.

Anger becomes courage against injustice.

Fear becomes prudence.

Strength becomes protection.

The lower becomes transformed by the higher.

---

15. The Transformation of Sexuality

This is particularly relevant to the theology of male and female.

Sexual difference belongs to earthly existence.

Male and female encounter one another physically.

But sexuality can become more than biological instinct.

Within a faithful relationship, it can express:

love,

trust,

union,

generativity,

and **self-giving.**

The heavenly meaning enters the earthly act.

---

16. Male and Female as Above and Below

Symbolically, the masculine and feminine can also participate in this vertical structure.

The masculine represents:

direction and initiative.

The feminine represents:

receptivity and embodiment.

But neither is simply “above” the other.

Both participate in the heavenly and earthly.

The man must receive.

The woman must act.

The polarity therefore becomes fluid within the interior Spirit.

---

17. The Male Descends Into Service

The spiritually mature male does not merely ascend toward spiritual knowledge.

He descends into service.

He takes responsibility.

He protects.

He provides.

He teaches.

He sacrifices.

His spiritual elevation becomes visible through earthly responsibility.

The higher he rises spiritually, the more deeply he serves.

---

18. The Female Ascends Through Awakening

The woman likewise does not remain confined to earthly receptivity.

She awakens.

She learns.

She develops discernment.

She acquires spiritual agency.

She becomes capable of knowledge.

Mary therefore represents the feminine ascent toward spiritual life.

The female body remains.

The Spirit awakens.

---

19. The Two Movements Meet

The male's descent into service and the female's ascent into spiritual agency meet in communion.

The husband becomes more receptive.

The wife becomes more active.

The two move toward integration.

The vertical movement becomes horizontal relationship.

Above and below become connected through human communion.

---

20. The Cross as Symbol

The Christian Cross provides an especially powerful symbol for this reconciliation.

Its vertical axis represents:

above and below.

Its horizontal axis represents:

self and other.

The intersection becomes the human condition.

Spirit meets embodiment.

God meets humanity.

The vertical and horizontal become one symbolic structure.

---

21. The Heavenly and Earthly Human

The Cross therefore provides a model for the integrated human.

The person reaches upward toward God.

The person reaches outward toward others.

Spirituality without relationship becomes abstraction.

Relationship without transcendence becomes attachment.

The two must meet.

---

22. The Kingdom Within and Beyond

The Kingdom can therefore be understood in two dimensions.

It is **within** insofar as the human discovers the divine orientation inwardly.

It is **beyond** insofar as the Kingdom exceeds ordinary earthly existence.

The person discovers the Kingdom within while simultaneously moving toward what transcends the present world.

---

23. Above Is Not Mere Escape

Heavenly orientation must not become hatred of earthly existence.

The spiritual person does not need to despise:

the body,

nature,

relationships,

or **ordinary responsibilities.**

Rather, these become places where Spirit can be expressed.

The goal is transformation rather than mere rejection.

---

24. Below Is Not the Final Reality

Conversely, earthly existence cannot become the final horizon.

The body ages.

Possessions disappear.

Relationships change.

Institutions collapse.

Death eventually interrupts embodied existence.

The spiritual person therefore refuses to treat temporary conditions as ultimate.

Below is real.

But it is not final.

25. The Present Age

The present age therefore represents an intermediate condition.

The Spirit lives within a world of impermanence.

The human being experiences:

birth,

growth,

desire,

suffering,

aging,

and **death.**

The Kingdom represents the fulfillment toward which the Spirit moves.

26. The Toll of Embodiment

Within the broader theology of this book, earthly embodiment creates vulnerability.

The body can be:

hungry,

tired,

injured,

sick,

sexually driven,

and **afraid.**

These experiences can become occasions for spiritual formation.

The Spirit learns not to become completely identified with them.

---

27. The Spirit Above Fear

The Spirit recognizes:

“I experience fear, but I am not merely fear.”

“I experience desire, but I am not merely desire.”

“I possess a body, but I am not merely my body.”

This creates spiritual distance.

The person becomes capable of observing the lower without being completely controlled by it.

---

28. The Higher and Lower Self

The human being can therefore be described through two tendencies.

The lower self seeks immediate gratification.

The higher self seeks truth and lasting good.

Spiritual formation strengthens the higher orientation.

The goal is not hatred of the lower self.

It is integration under a higher principle.

---

29. The Restoration of Order

Restoration therefore means proper order:

Spirit over impulse.

Truth over illusion.

Love over domination.

Wisdom over ignorance.

Eternal orientation over temporary attachment.

The higher does not annihilate the lower.

It gives the lower its proper place.

---

30. The Pneumatic Human

Within the threefold anthropology developed throughout the book, this is characteristic of the pneumatic human.

The pneumatic recognizes the higher reality.

The psychic remains primarily oriented toward the moral and psychological order.

The hylic remains primarily identified with material existence.

The pneumatic therefore experiences earthly existence as something that must be transcended through knowledge.

---

31. The Heavenly Seed

The pneumatic possesses the image of the heavenly within.

This can be called the **seed of Spirit**.

The seed exists within earthly embodiment.

It is hidden.

Spiritual awakening causes it to germinate.

The heavenly therefore emerges from within the earthly human.

---

32. The Woman and the Heavenly Seed

Mary becomes an especially important symbol because the female body is not treated as an obstacle to the heavenly seed.

The Spirit can awaken within woman.

The heavenly can manifest through the female body.

Therefore biological sex cannot determine spiritual destiny.

The heavenly seed transcends the categories of flesh.

---

33. The Male and the Heavenly Seed

The same applies to the male.

The male body does not automatically make a person spiritually awakened.

The man must also discover the Spirit within.

He must overcome:

pride,

lust,

domination,

ignorance,

and **self-will.**

Male embodiment is no guarantee of spiritual superiority.

---

34. Above and Below as Transformation

The purpose of the vertical movement is therefore transformation.

The person does not merely travel from earth to heaven.

Heaven begins transforming the person while the person remains on earth.

The Kingdom becomes present through transformed consciousness.

The earthly becomes illuminated.

---

35. The Human as Temple of Reconciliation

The human being becomes the meeting place.

Within one person:

body and Spirit meet.

masculine and feminine meet.

inner and outer meet.

earth and heaven meet.

The human becomes a temple of reconciliation.

This is the restoration of the Androgynous Human.

---

36. The Inner Ascent

The ascent begins with attention.

The person turns inward.

Observes desire.

Examines thought.

Recognizes attachment.

Discerns the difference between ego and Spirit.

This inward movement leads toward contemplation.

---

37. The Outer Descent

But contemplation must eventually return to life.

The person leaves the contemplative state and acts.

He forgives.

She serves.

The husband loves.

The wife counsels.

The family reconciles.

The spiritual insight becomes embodied.

The ascent and descent become one cycle.

---

38. Heaven and Earth in Marriage

Marriage itself can become a symbol of this reconciliation.

The transcendent purpose of love becomes embodied through earthly relationship.

The husband and wife remain earthly.

But their relationship can become oriented toward something higher.

Marriage becomes more than biological reproduction.

It becomes a school of love.

---

39. Above and Below in Authority

The same applies to authority.

The husband's earthly authority becomes legitimate when it reflects a higher principle.

He does not invent the moral law.

He receives it.

His authority descends from responsibility before God.

Thus earthly authority becomes accountable to heavenly truth.

---

40. Above and Below in Submission

Likewise, the wife's earthly submission can become spiritually meaningful when it is understood as participation in an order oriented toward God.

She does not ultimately submit to a man as an absolute.

She participates in a household order that remains beneath divine authority.

The vertical hierarchy therefore prevents human authority from becoming absolute.

---

41. The Guide and the Heaven

The male guide must therefore remain connected to the higher reality.

He cannot become the source of truth.

He is a mediator.

He points upward.

He teaches the household to seek God.

His authority is derivative.

The higher he points, the less he needs to glorify himself.

---

42. The Woman and the Heaven

The woman likewise reaches upward.

She is not spiritually dependent upon her husband as her final source.

She seeks God directly.

She receives instruction.

She participates in the household.

But her deepest orientation remains heavenly.

This preserves her spiritual dignity.

---

43. The Human Between Worlds

The human being therefore lives between worlds.

The body belongs to the earthly.

The Spirit reaches toward the heavenly.

The person experiences both.

This tension is not necessarily a defect.

It can become the engine of spiritual awakening.

The human feels the limitations of earth and longs for transcendence.

---

44. Homesickness for the Above

The pneumatic human experiences something like homesickness.

The world does not feel completely sufficient.

Material success cannot satisfy the deepest longing.

Pleasure cannot satisfy it.

Power cannot satisfy it.

Recognition cannot satisfy it.

The Spirit seeks its source.

This longing becomes the movement upward.

---

45. The Descent of Wisdom

Yet wisdom also moves downward.

The insight gained in contemplation must become:

speech,

conduct,

relationship,

service,

and **love.**

Otherwise spiritual knowledge remains sterile.

The truly awakened person brings heaven into ordinary existence.

---

46. Above and Below Reconciled

This is the central reconciliation:

Above gives meaning to below.

Below gives embodiment to above.

Heaven gives direction.

Earth gives expression.

Spirit gives life.

Body gives form.

The two become one integrated human existence.

---

47. The Final Transcendence

Yet reconciliation does not mean that the earthly becomes permanent in its present form.

The earthly remains temporary.

The body remains mortal.

The present age remains passing.

The ultimate destiny of the pneumatic human remains beyond the present condition.

Therefore reconciliation is a stage toward transcendence.

---

48. The Living Spirit

The living Spirit stands at the intersection.

It knows its heavenly origin.

It inhabits earthly embodiment.

It transforms the lower.

It reaches toward the higher.

It becomes neither trapped below nor detached from below.

It lives consciously between worlds.

---

49. The Restoration of the Androgynous Human

The Androgynous Human therefore becomes both:

heavenly and earthly,

masculine and feminine,

active and receptive,

inner and outer.

The human being becomes a bridge.

The divisions remain visible.

But they are no longer absolute.

---

50. The Final Ascent

Eventually the spiritual journey reaches beyond the present earthly order.

The Spirit returns toward its source.

The body returns to the earth.

The Spirit continues its ascent.

The temporary distinction between above and below gives way to the realization of the higher unity.

The human discovers the source from which the Spirit came.

Conclusion — Above and Below

The reconciliation of above and below is the vertical dimension of the restoration described by Thomas 22.

Above represents:

Spirit, heaven, truth, wisdom, and divine reality.

Below represents:

body, earth, embodiment, relationship, and temporal existence.

The spiritual human lives between them.

The body anchors the person below.

The Spirit draws the person above.

But the mature human does not simply choose one and reject the other.

The Spirit descends into life.

Life reaches toward Spirit.

The heavenly becomes embodied.

The earthly becomes illuminated.

The male becomes capable of receptivity.

The female becomes capable of spiritual agency.

Authority becomes service.

Submission becomes trust.

The inner becomes visible.

The outer becomes transformed.

Thus the Androgynous Human becomes a **meeting place between heaven and earth**.

The final movement is therefore:

above → below → reconciliation → transformation → ascent.

The Spirit enters the world without becoming imprisoned by it.

The body participates in spiritual life without becoming the whole of it.

And the human being gradually discovers the mystery that lies behind both:

heaven and earth are not ultimately enemies.

They are two dimensions of a greater restoration.

Above gives the human being its origin.
Below gives the human being its embodiment.
The Spirit unites them.

And the restored human becomes the living image of that union.